

NPS ARCHIVE  
1961  
SAUNDERS, E.

Library  
U. S. Naval Postgraduate School  
Monterey, California















3.239404  
THE GROUND STATE OF SOLID HELIUM THREE

A DISSERTATION

SUBMITTED TO THE DEPARTMENT OF PHYSICS  
AND THE COMMITTEE ON THE GRADUATE DIVISION  
OF STANFORD UNIVERSITY

IN PARTIAL FULFILLMENT OF THE REQUIREMENTS  
FOR THE DEGREE OF  
DOCTOR OF PHILOSOPHY

By

Edward Monell Saunders

//  
April 1961



### ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

The author is greatly indebted to Professor Leonard I. Schiff for suggesting this problem. His generous encouragement and effective teaching throughout this work were invaluable. The author is grateful to Professor W. M. Fairbank for his continuing encouragement and for many conversations concerning the experimental data.

The author is also grateful to H. Primakoff and H. Bernardes for several informative discussions on the theory of solid helium three. P. O. Löwdin generously gave his time to an illuminating discussion of the density matrix formalism. Professor Nina Byers provided helpful guidance during a portion of the work. There were many informative discussions with Dr. John M. Goodkind and Dr. E. D. Adams. The helpful cooperation of Miss A. L. Berg is much appreciated.

The author, a lieutenant commander in the United States Navy, undertook this work while a student under the Advanced Science Curriculum, a Navy educational program sponsored by the Office of Naval Research and the Bureau of Naval Personnel, and administered by the U. S. Naval Postgraduate School, Monterey, California. Material support was provided by the Postgraduate School and the Office of Scientific Research, U. S. Air Force.

## CHAPTER 1

There is a great deal of interest in the study of the history of the world, and it is not surprising that many of the most interesting and important events in the history of the world have been the result of the actions of individuals. The study of the history of the world is a study of the actions of individuals, and it is a study of the actions of individuals that have shaped the world as we know it.

The study of the history of the world is a study of the actions of individuals, and it is a study of the actions of individuals that have shaped the world as we know it. The study of the history of the world is a study of the actions of individuals, and it is a study of the actions of individuals that have shaped the world as we know it.

The study of the history of the world is a study of the actions of individuals, and it is a study of the actions of individuals that have shaped the world as we know it. The study of the history of the world is a study of the actions of individuals, and it is a study of the actions of individuals that have shaped the world as we know it. The study of the history of the world is a study of the actions of individuals, and it is a study of the actions of individuals that have shaped the world as we know it.

The study of the history of the world is a study of the actions of individuals, and it is a study of the actions of individuals that have shaped the world as we know it. The study of the history of the world is a study of the actions of individuals, and it is a study of the actions of individuals that have shaped the world as we know it.

The study of the history of the world is a study of the actions of individuals, and it is a study of the actions of individuals that have shaped the world as we know it. The study of the history of the world is a study of the actions of individuals, and it is a study of the actions of individuals that have shaped the world as we know it. The study of the history of the world is a study of the actions of individuals, and it is a study of the actions of individuals that have shaped the world as we know it.

1



# TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page
ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS . . . . .	iii
LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS . . . . .	vi
Chapter	
I DESCRIPTION OF SOLID HELIUM . . . . .	1
Rare Gas Solids . . . . .	1
Properties of Atomic and Solid Helium . . . . .	2
The Helium Interparticle Potential and the Many Body Hamiltonian . . . . .	5
II THEORIES OF SOLID HELIUM . . . . .	10
Zero-Point Motion in Solid Helium . . . . .	10
Theories of Solid Helium Four . . . . .	13
Theories of Solid Helium Three . . . . .	16
III A WAVE FUNCTION WITH CORRELATIONS--THE PLIVINAGE METHOD . . . . .	22
Meaning of Particle Correlations . . . . .	22
Use of the Interparticle Distance in Describing Correlation Effects . . . . .	27
The Plivnige Method . . . . .	29
Removal of the Singular Interparticle Potential . . . .	35
IV THE MANY BODY PROBLEM IN SOLID HELIUM THREE . . . . .	41
Density Matrix Formulation of the Many Body Problem .	41
Single-Particle Density . . . . .	44
A Solution of the Density Equation for Dense Solids . . . . .	49
Single-Particle Energy Density . . . . .	63
Exchange Energy . . . . .	69
V COMPARISON WITH EXPERIMENT . . . . .	81
Elastic Effects . . . . .	81
Exchange Effects . . . . .	88
Conclusions . . . . .	96

# ANSWERS

100

1. The first two terms of the series are 1 and 2, and the sum of the first two terms is 3.

2. The first two terms of the series are 1 and 2, and the sum of the first two terms is 3.

3. The first two terms of the series are 1 and 2, and the sum of the first two terms is 3.

4. The first two terms of the series are 1 and 2, and the sum of the first two terms is 3.

5. The first two terms of the series are 1 and 2, and the sum of the first two terms is 3.

6. The first two terms of the series are 1 and 2, and the sum of the first two terms is 3.

7. The first two terms of the series are 1 and 2, and the sum of the first two terms is 3.

8. The first two terms of the series are 1 and 2, and the sum of the first two terms is 3.

9. The first two terms of the series are 1 and 2, and the sum of the first two terms is 3.

10. The first two terms of the series are 1 and 2, and the sum of the first two terms is 3.

11. The first two terms of the series are 1 and 2, and the sum of the first two terms is 3.

12. The first two terms of the series are 1 and 2, and the sum of the first two terms is 3.

13. The first two terms of the series are 1 and 2, and the sum of the first two terms is 3.

14. The first two terms of the series are 1 and 2, and the sum of the first two terms is 3.

15. The first two terms of the series are 1 and 2, and the sum of the first two terms is 3.

16. The first two terms of the series are 1 and 2, and the sum of the first two terms is 3.

17. The first two terms of the series are 1 and 2, and the sum of the first two terms is 3.

18. The first two terms of the series are 1 and 2, and the sum of the first two terms is 3.

19. The first two terms of the series are 1 and 2, and the sum of the first two terms is 3.

20. The first two terms of the series are 1 and 2, and the sum of the first two terms is 3.

# TABLE OF CONTENTS (Continued)

	Page
APPENDICES . . . . .	97
A     THE DERIVATIVES OF THE WAVE FUNCTION WITH INTERPARTICLE PARAMETER . . . . .	98
B     SOLUTION OF THE CORRELATION AMPLITUDE EQUATION . . . .	103
C     NON-LOCAL AVERAGING . . . . .	108
D     CALCULATION OF THE TERMS OF THE EXPONENTIAL SUM . . .	113
E     SAMPLE CALCULATION OF $\delta^2$ . . . . .	117
F     THE CONTRIBUTION TO THE ENERGY OF THE PELVINAGE PERTURBATION . . . . .	118
G     THE CORRELATION ENERGY MATRIX ELEMENT . . . . .	123
H     NORMALIZATION OF THE WAVE FUNCTION . . . . .	127
GLOSSARY . . . . .	135



# LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

Figure		Page
1	Particle Correlations . . . . .	25
2	Correlation Amplitude . . . . .	39
3	Correlation Probability Density . . . . .	40
4	Lattice Sum for Two-Dimensional Square Lattice . . . . .	54
5	Elements of the Logarithmic Sum, $\epsilon_{\lambda 0}$ , Plotted Against Radial Distance . . . . .	60
6	The Probability Density Parameter $\delta^2$ Plotted Against Lattice Constant $a$ for Body-Centered Cubic Helium Three . . . . .	62
7	Cohesive Energy and Activation Energy of Nuclear Resonance Relaxation . . . . .	83
8	Pressure <u>vs</u> Lattice Constant . . . . .	85
9	Susceptibility Data of Adams, Meyer and Fairbank . . . . .	89
10	Curie Temperature for Pressure of 35.7 atm . . . . .	91
11	Curie Temperature <u>vs</u> Lattice Constant . . . . .	92
12	Coordinates for Long Range Averaging Integral . . . . .	109



# CHAPTER 10

Page	Page
10.1	10.1
10.2	10.2
10.3	10.3
10.4	10.4
10.5	10.5
10.6	10.6
10.7	10.7
10.8	10.8
10.9	10.9
10.10	10.10
10.11	10.11
10.12	10.12
10.13	10.13
10.14	10.14
10.15	10.15
10.16	10.16
10.17	10.17
10.18	10.18
10.19	10.19
10.20	10.20
10.21	10.21
10.22	10.22
10.23	10.23
10.24	10.24
10.25	10.25
10.26	10.26
10.27	10.27
10.28	10.28
10.29	10.29
10.30	10.30
10.31	10.31
10.32	10.32
10.33	10.33
10.34	10.34
10.35	10.35
10.36	10.36
10.37	10.37
10.38	10.38
10.39	10.39
10.40	10.40
10.41	10.41
10.42	10.42
10.43	10.43
10.44	10.44
10.45	10.45
10.46	10.46
10.47	10.47
10.48	10.48
10.49	10.49
10.50	10.50
10.51	10.51
10.52	10.52
10.53	10.53
10.54	10.54
10.55	10.55
10.56	10.56
10.57	10.57
10.58	10.58
10.59	10.59
10.60	10.60
10.61	10.61
10.62	10.62
10.63	10.63
10.64	10.64
10.65	10.65
10.66	10.66
10.67	10.67
10.68	10.68
10.69	10.69
10.70	10.70
10.71	10.71
10.72	10.72
10.73	10.73
10.74	10.74
10.75	10.75
10.76	10.76
10.77	10.77
10.78	10.78
10.79	10.79
10.80	10.80
10.81	10.81
10.82	10.82
10.83	10.83
10.84	10.84
10.85	10.85
10.86	10.86
10.87	10.87
10.88	10.88
10.89	10.89
10.90	10.90
10.91	10.91
10.92	10.92
10.93	10.93
10.94	10.94
10.95	10.95
10.96	10.96
10.97	10.97
10.98	10.98
10.99	10.99
10.100	10.100

## CHAPTER I

### DESCRIPTION OF SOLID HELIUM

#### Rare Gas Solids

The physical properties of the solid phases of the "rare gas" elements are of particular interest because their atomic electrons occupy fully closed shells, and the only chemical binding force is the weak van der Waals interaction. The physical properties of these solids are thus in many respects more open to analysis than most other solids. Further, the weakness of the interparticle force gives rise to definite quantum-mechanical effects in the motion of the atoms in the condensed state.

Dobbs and Jones<sup>1</sup> have written an extensive review of the experimental and theoretical work on these solids, with emphasis on solid argon. They show the importance of the quantum-mechanical zero-point energy by listing the ratio of zero-point energy to cohesive energy for the rare gases (listed in order of decreasing atomic weight): xenon, 0.031; krypton, 0.054; argon, 0.097; neon, 0.311; helium four, 3.92. Hence, ordinary classical lattice dynamics applies to xenon, krypton, and argon, with small quantum-mechanical corrections. Neon can be treated adequately by including anharmonic terms in the interatomic potential. However, helium is of such low atomic mass that more powerful techniques must

---

<sup>1</sup>E. R. Dobbs and G. G. Jones, Theory and Properties of Solid Argon. Reports on Progress in Physics, Vol. XX, 516 (1957).





be employed.<sup>2</sup> Further, there is also an isotope of atomic weight three, which has spin 1/2 and obeys the Fermi-Dirac statistics.

This thesis is directed to the task of describing the ground state of  $\text{He}^3$  in a way which includes quantum effects in the basic formalism. The description of the ground state will be used in turn to calculate physical quantities which will be compared with experimentally observed quantities.

Bernardes and Primakoff<sup>3</sup> (hereafter termed B.P.) have presented a theory of solid  $\text{He}^3$  and have drawn extensive conclusions from their approximate ground-state wave function. The present work is mainly an attempt to give a more accurate description of the ground state than the formulation of B.P.

#### Properties of Atomic and Solid Helium

Solid  $\text{He}^4$  possesses no such startling properties as the liquid phase. There has been no such intensive application of powerful theoretical tools to the solid, as there has been to the liquid. However, much experimental work has been performed, and theoretical explanation made of the observed results. Several reviews of the properties of solid  $\text{He}^4$  have been published.<sup>2,4,5</sup>

---

<sup>2</sup>C. Domb and J. S. Dugdale, Solid Helium. Progress in Low Temperature Physics, Vol. II (C. J. Gorter, editor Interscience Publishers, New York, 1957) p. 339.

<sup>3</sup>H. Bernardes and H. Primakoff, Phys. Rev. **117**, 963 (1961).

<sup>4</sup>F. London, Superfluids, Vol. II (Wiley and Sons, New York, 1954).

<sup>5</sup>K. R. Atkins, Liquid Helium (Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 1959).



Since 1943,  $\text{He}^3$  has been made available in increasing amounts, and there has been considerable recent work with this isotope. Broad discussion of the properties of liquid and solid  $\text{He}^3$  is contained in several sources.<sup>4,5,6,7,8,9,10,11</sup>

The nuclear moment of  $\text{He}^3$  is - 2.1274 nuclear magnetons. Its atomic mass (on the  $O^{16}$  scale) is 3.01693, while that of  $\text{He}^4$  is 4.00388. Properties which are directly due to the atomic electrons are the same for the two isotopes aside from an extremely small effective mass correction. These effects include atomic spectra and the interatomic potential.

At atmospheric pressure,  $\text{He}^3$ , like  $\text{He}^4$ , remains liquid at absolute zero temperature. Crystallization takes place on application of about 30 atm of pressure. A pressure of twenty-five atm is needed to solidify  $\text{He}^4$ .

The properties of solid  $\text{He}^3$  have not been thoroughly explored experimentally. Much nuclear resonance experimentation has been carried

<sup>6</sup>E. F. Hammel, The Low Temperature Properties of Helium Three. Progress in Low Temperature Physics, Vol. I (C. J. Gorter, editor, Interscience Publisher, New York, 1937), p. 76.

<sup>7</sup>V. P. Peshkov and K. H. Zinoveva, Reports on Progress in Physics, Vol. XXII, 504 (1959).

<sup>8</sup>Proceedings of the Symposium on Solid and Liquid Helium Three (Ohio State University, 1957).

<sup>9</sup>Helium Three (J. G. Daunt, editor, Ohio State University Press, Columbus, Ohio, 1960).

<sup>10</sup>Proceedings of the Seventh International Conference on Low Temperature Physics (G. M. Graham and A. C. Hollis Mallet, editors, University of Toronto Press, 1961), p. 583.

<sup>11</sup>B. A. Grilly and E. F. Hammel, Liquid and Solid  $\text{He}^3$ . Progress in Low Temperature Physics, Vol. III (C. J. Gorter, editor, to be published).





out. W. M. Fairbank has reviewed this work.<sup>9,10,11</sup> Data on the PVT relationships near the melting curve have been published by E. R. Grilly, S. G. Sydorak, and R. L. Mills,<sup>9</sup> and by Grilly and Mills.<sup>12</sup> Data on thermal conductivity have been published by E. J. Walker and H. A. Fairbank.<sup>9</sup>

Schuch, Grilly and Mills,<sup>13</sup> through X-ray diffraction, have found that solid  $\text{He}^3$  exists in two phases. The so-called  $\alpha$  phase, a body-center cubic configuration, exists at pressures below about 100 atm, and the  $\beta$  phase, of hexagonal close-packed structure, exists at higher pressures. This phase transition was also observed by Grilly and Mills,<sup>12</sup> as a systematic discontinuity in the specific volume.

Preliminary measurements of specific heat of the solid have been made by Edwards, Baum, Brewer, Daunt and McWilliams.<sup>9</sup> The pressure-temperature dependence of the melting curve has been obtained to  $0.06^\circ \text{K}$  by the same group. They find the entropy to have a constant value close to  $R \ln 2$  over the range  $0.07^\circ \text{K}$  to  $0.7^\circ \text{K}$ .

The principal anomaly in the behavior of the solid lies in a minimum in the melting pressure curve, plotted as a function of temperature, at  $p = 29.3 \text{ atm}$ ,  $T = .32^\circ \text{K}$ . The existence of the minimum is accompanied by interesting effects, including a negative thermal expansion coefficient, and the consequent possibility of melting the solid by lowering its temperature at constant pressure. By the Clausius-Clapeyron equation

---

<sup>12</sup>E. R. Grilly and R. L. Mills, *Ann. Phys.* 3, 1, (1959).

<sup>13</sup>A. F. Schuch, E. R. Grilly, and R. L. Mills, *Phys. Rev.* 110, 775 (1958).



$$\left. \frac{dp}{dT} \right|_{\text{melt}} = \frac{S_{\text{liq}} - S_{\text{sol}}}{V_{\text{liq}} - V_{\text{sol}}}$$

The existence of higher thermodynamic order in the liquid than in the solid would yield such behavior.

### The Helium Interparticle Potential and The Many Body Hamiltonian

The stationary states of an aggregate of helium atoms are solutions of the Schrodinger equation

$$H_{\text{He}} \bar{\psi}_n = E_n \bar{\psi}_n, \quad (1)$$

where  $H_{\text{He}}$  is the many body Hamiltonian involving all the nuclei and all the electrons of the solid:

$$H_{\text{He}} = - \sum_{i=1}^K \frac{\hbar^2}{2m_e} \nabla_i^2 - \sum_{a=1}^N \frac{\hbar^2}{2M} \nabla_a^2 + \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i,j} \frac{e^2}{r_{ij}} \\ + V_{\text{el}}(x_1 \dots x_N, y_1 \dots y_K) + V_{\text{nn}}(y_1 \dots y_K). \quad (2)$$

Here  $i$  labels one of the  $K$  electrons,  $a$  labels one of the  $N$  nuclei, the  $x_i$  label all the coordinates (including spin) of electron  $i$ . Nuclear coordinates are described by the  $y$ 's.  $V_{\text{el}}$  and  $V_{\text{nn}}$  are the nucleus-electron and nucleus-nucleus potential energy.

Following the adiabatic approximate of Born and Oppenheimer,<sup>14</sup> we separate  $\psi$  into a part depending upon electron coordinates that contains

---

<sup>14</sup>M. Born and J. R. Oppenheimer, Ann. Physik, 84, 457, (1927).



$$\frac{d^2 y}{dx^2} = \frac{1}{x^2}$$

The general solution of the differential equation is given by

$$y = -\frac{1}{x} + C_1 x + C_2$$

where  $C_1$  and  $C_2$  are arbitrary constants.

$$y = -\frac{1}{x} + C_1 x + C_2$$

The particular solution of the differential equation is given by

$$y = -\frac{1}{x} + \frac{1}{2}x^2 + \frac{1}{2}$$

$$y = -\frac{1}{x} + \frac{1}{2}x^2 + \frac{1}{2}$$

The particular solution of the differential equation is given by

$$y = -\frac{1}{x} + \frac{1}{2}x^2 + \frac{1}{2}$$



nuclear coordinates as parameters, and a part depending only on nuclear coordinates

$$\bar{H} = \psi_{y_1} \cdots \psi_{y_N} (x_1, \cdots x_K) \phi (y_1, \cdots y_N)$$

We define the part of  $H_{He}$  depending on electron coordinates and nuclear charges as  $H_e$ . Then

$$H_e \psi_{y_1} \cdots \psi_{y_N} (x_1, \cdots x_K) = E_e \psi_{y_1} \cdots \psi_{y_N} \psi_{y_1} \cdots \psi_{y_N} (x_1 \cdots x_K), \quad (3)$$

where we show the Schrödinger equation for the electrons, from which we obtain the electron energy and state, for a particular arrangement of the nuclei described by the values of the parameters  $(y_1, y_2 \cdots y_N)$ .

Through application of the adiabatic approximation,<sup>15</sup> where we include the functional dependence of  $E_e$  and  $\psi$  on the  $y$ 's, assuming only that the electron motion can adjust at every instant to the changing positions of the nuclei, and with the motion still determined by (3), we obtain

$$\sum_{a=1}^N -\frac{\hbar^2}{2M_a} \nabla_a^2 \phi + E_e(y_1, y_2 \cdots y_N) \phi = E \phi \quad (4)$$

We see from this development that the internuclear potential  $E_e$  [for that is the role it plays in (4)] is a function of the positions of all the nuclei, and results from the presence of the atomic electrons and nuclear charges.

---

<sup>15</sup>A complete development of the adiabatic approximation applied to the present problem is given by F. Seitz in Modern Theory of Solids (McGraw Hill Book Co., Inc., New York, 1940) p. 470.

Consider the given polynomial (1) in the polynomial ring  $R[x]$ .  
 (2)  $R[x]$  is a unique factorization domain.

$$(x^2 + 1)(x^2 + 2x + 1)(x^2 + 3x + 1)(x^2 + 4x + 1) \dots$$

Consider the polynomial (1) in the polynomial ring  $R[x]$ .  
 (2)  $R[x]$  is a unique factorization domain.

$$(x^2 + 1)(x^2 + 2x + 1)(x^2 + 3x + 1)(x^2 + 4x + 1) \dots$$

Consider the polynomial (1) in the polynomial ring  $R[x]$ .  
 (2)  $R[x]$  is a unique factorization domain.

$$(x^2 + 1)(x^2 + 2x + 1)(x^2 + 3x + 1)(x^2 + 4x + 1) \dots$$

Consider the polynomial (1) in the polynomial ring  $R[x]$ .  
 (2)  $R[x]$  is a unique factorization domain.

Consider the polynomial (1) in the polynomial ring  $R[x]$ .  
 (2)  $R[x]$  is a unique factorization domain.

$$(1) \quad (x^2 + 1)(x^2 + 2x + 1)(x^2 + 3x + 1)(x^2 + 4x + 1) \dots$$

Consider the polynomial (1) in the polynomial ring  $R[x]$ .  
 (2)  $R[x]$  is a unique factorization domain.

$$(x^2 + 1)(x^2 + 2x + 1)(x^2 + 3x + 1)(x^2 + 4x + 1) \dots$$

Consider the polynomial (1) in the polynomial ring  $R[x]$ .  
 (2)  $R[x]$  is a unique factorization domain.

$$(x^2 + 1)(x^2 + 2x + 1)(x^2 + 3x + 1)(x^2 + 4x + 1) \dots$$

To obtain an explicit form for  $E_e$ , detailed study of (4) is required.

Hirschfelder, Curtiss and Bird<sup>16</sup> have described the commonly used phenomenological forms of the interaction potential of  $\text{He}^4$  atoms, and have given an overview of the theory. DeBoer<sup>17</sup> has compared several of these forms of the potential. Moore<sup>18</sup> has made a recent contribution to the theory of the repulsive core of the potential.

At distances large compared to the Bohr radius, the interaction of two helium atoms as described by (4) is characterized by the van der Waals interaction, which arises from attraction between the electric dipole moments mutually induced in the electron charge distributions. This interaction energy depends inversely on the sixth power of the separation distance  $r$  of the atoms. There are also higher order terms; the next is the dipole-quadrupole energy, which is proportional to  $r^{-8}$ . At close distances of approach, of the order of two Bohr radii, the potential is steeply repulsive, roughly proportional to  $e^{-4.60r}$  ( $r$  in Å). The electron clouds are stabilized around each nucleus and strongly repel each other when they start to overlap because of both Coulomb repulsion and the Pauli principle.

The phenomenological forms of the potential have been obtained by fitting the theoretical forms for the potential to the temperature depend-

---

<sup>16</sup>J. O. Hirschfelder, C. F. Curtiss and R. B. Bird, Molecular Theory of Gases and Liquids (Wiley and Sons, New York, 1954) pp. 1004 and 106.

<sup>17</sup>J. DeBoer, Physica 24, 891, (1958).

<sup>18</sup>H. Moore, J. Chem. Phys. 33, 471, (1960).

is still to be done because  $\gamma_2$  and  $\gamma_3$  are not known at present.

— *Conclusions* —

Two samples of polymerized and  $\beta$ -lactamized polyacrylonitrile

have been  $\beta$ -lactamized and  $\beta$ -lactamized. The results show that the  $\beta$ -lactamization of the polymerized and  $\beta$ -lactamized polyacrylonitrile is not as complete as that of the monomer. The  $\beta$ -lactamization of the polymerized and  $\beta$ -lactamized polyacrylonitrile is not as complete as that of the monomer.

— *References* —

1. J. H. Duerksen and J. H. Duerksen, *J. Polym. Sci. A-1*, **1**, 1001 (1963).

2. J. H. Duerksen and J. H. Duerksen, *J. Polym. Sci. A-1*, **1**, 1001 (1963).

3. J. H. Duerksen and J. H. Duerksen, *J. Polym. Sci. A-1*, **1**, 1001 (1963).

4. J. H. Duerksen and J. H. Duerksen, *J. Polym. Sci. A-1*, **1**, 1001 (1963).

5. J. H. Duerksen and J. H. Duerksen, *J. Polym. Sci. A-1*, **1**, 1001 (1963).

6. J. H. Duerksen and J. H. Duerksen, *J. Polym. Sci. A-1*, **1**, 1001 (1963).

7. J. H. Duerksen and J. H. Duerksen, *J. Polym. Sci. A-1*, **1**, 1001 (1963).

8. J. H. Duerksen and J. H. Duerksen, *J. Polym. Sci. A-1*, **1**, 1001 (1963).

9. J. H. Duerksen and J. H. Duerksen, *J. Polym. Sci. A-1*, **1**, 1001 (1963).

10. J. H. Duerksen and J. H. Duerksen, *J. Polym. Sci. A-1*, **1**, 1001 (1963).

11. J. H. Duerksen and J. H. Duerksen, *J. Polym. Sci. A-1*, **1**, 1001 (1963).

12. J. H. Duerksen and J. H. Duerksen, *J. Polym. Sci. A-1*, **1**, 1001 (1963).

13. J. H. Duerksen and J. H. Duerksen, *J. Polym. Sci. A-1*, **1**, 1001 (1963).

14. J. H. Duerksen and J. H. Duerksen, *J. Polym. Sci. A-1*, **1**, 1001 (1963).

15. J. H. Duerksen and J. H. Duerksen, *J. Polym. Sci. A-1*, **1**, 1001 (1963).

16. J. H. Duerksen and J. H. Duerksen, *J. Polym. Sci. A-1*, **1**, 1001 (1963).

17. J. H. Duerksen and J. H. Duerksen, *J. Polym. Sci. A-1*, **1**, 1001 (1963).

18. J. H. Duerksen and J. H. Duerksen, *J. Polym. Sci. A-1*, **1**, 1001 (1963).



ence of the second virial coefficient of the rare gases in the gaseous state. A form of the potential which has been calculated with low temperature data and which has been found to predict the virial coefficient with good accuracy to at least  $1^\circ \text{K}$  is that of Buckingham, Hamilton and Massey,<sup>19</sup> hereafter termed B.H.M. This potential has the form:

$$V(r) = \left[ 770 e^{-4.60r} - \frac{1.49}{r^6} \right] \times 10^{-12} \text{ erg} \quad r \leq 2.61 \text{ \AA.} \quad (5)$$

$$V(r) = \left[ 977 e^{-4.60r} - \frac{1.50}{r^6} - \frac{2.51}{r^8} \right] \times 10^{-12} \text{ erg} \quad r \geq 2.61 \text{ \AA.}$$

Analytical application of this form would be difficult. However, the two-parameter potential of Lennard-Jones

$$V(r) = 4 \epsilon \left[ \left( \frac{\sigma}{r} \right)^{12} - \left( \frac{\sigma}{r} \right)^6 \right] \quad (6)$$

with  $\epsilon = 10.22^\circ \text{K}$ ,  $\sigma = 2.556 \text{ \AA}$ , gives a very close fit to the B.H.M. potential. Its behavior in the region of severe repulsion varies from that of the more precise B.H.M. form, but it will be apparent later that this deviation takes place in a region of such high repulsive potential as to leave physical results unaffected.<sup>20</sup>

Three helium atoms in proximity undergo a three-way induced dipole interaction, which follows the relationship<sup>21</sup>

---

<sup>19</sup>R. A. Buckingham, J. Hamilton, and H. S. W. Massey, Proc. Roy. Soc. (London) A172, 103, (1941).

<sup>20</sup>It is later demonstrated that the basic physical effect of the repulsive core is to reduce the probability density obtained from the many-body wave function practically to zero. Either form of the potential is equally effective in this regard.

<sup>21</sup>P. Rosen, J. Chem. Phys. 21, 1007, (1953).



$$\frac{E_{abc}}{E_{ab} + E_{bc} + E_{ca}} = 9.8 e^{-.66(r_{ab} + r_{bc} + r_{ca})},$$

where  $r_{ab}$  is the distance between atoms  $a$  and  $b$  measured in Bohr radii,  $E_{abc}$  is the induced triple dipole energy, and  $E_{ab}$  is the two-body energy. In cases of interest to us  $r_{ab} > 2.3$  A. Then

$E_{abc}/(E_{ab} + E_{bc} + E_{ca})$  is of the order of  $10^{-3}$ , and so can be ignored.

Hence we are correct in stating that  $E_e(y_1, \dots, y_N)$  is described adequately for our purposes by (6), and the many-body Hamiltonian, written to include all Coulomb and electronic effects is

$$H_M = \sum_{e=1}^N -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \nabla_e^2 + \frac{1}{2} \sum_{a,b=1}^N \left[ \left( \frac{\sigma}{r_{ab}} \right)^{10} - \left( \frac{\sigma}{r_{ab}} \right)^6 \right].$$

This Hamiltonian is valid under the following liberal conditions:

1. Temperature less than about  $50^\circ$  K
2. Density less than that corresponding to a nearest neighbor distance of 2.5 A.

$$f(x) = x^2 + 2x + 1$$

The function  $f(x)$  is a parabola opening upwards with its vertex at  $(-1, 0)$ . The graph of  $f(x)$  is shown below. The x-axis and y-axis are labeled. The parabola passes through the points  $(-2, 1)$ ,  $(-1, 0)$ , and  $(0, 1)$ . The area under the curve is shaded.

$$\left[ \left( \frac{1}{x} \right) + \left( \frac{1}{x^2} \right) \right]_{x=1}^{x=2} = \left( \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{4} \right) - \left( 1 + 1 \right) = -\frac{5}{4}$$

The area under the curve is  $-\frac{5}{4}$ . The function  $f(x)$  is a parabola opening upwards with its vertex at  $(-1, 0)$ . The graph of  $f(x)$  is shown below. The x-axis and y-axis are labeled. The parabola passes through the points  $(-2, 1)$ ,  $(-1, 0)$ , and  $(0, 1)$ . The area under the curve is shaded.



## CHAPTER II

### THEORIES OF SOLID HELIUM

#### Zero-Point Motion in Solid Helium

We shall use the many-body Hamiltonian containing the nuclear position coordinates

$$H = \sum_i \left[ -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \nabla_i^2 + \frac{1}{2} \sum_{ij} V(r_{ij}) \right] \quad (1)$$

with the potential

$$V(r_{ij}) = 4 \epsilon \left[ \left( \frac{\sigma}{r_{ij}} \right)^{12} - \left( \frac{\sigma}{r_{ij}} \right)^6 \right] \quad (2)$$

between pairs of helium atoms.

Our purpose is to solve the Schrödinger equation for the ground state of the solid,  $\psi_0$  and to obtain the ground state energy  $E_0$ , given by

$$H \psi_0(\vec{x}_1, \vec{x}_2, \dots, \vec{x}_N) = E_0 \psi_0(\vec{x}_1, \vec{x}_2, \dots, \vec{x}_N) \quad (3)$$

where  $\vec{x}_1$  describes all the relevant coordinates of particle 1, including spin, of any.  $\psi_0$  must have the symmetry required by the statistics. For  $\text{He}^3$ , which has spin 1/2 and obeys Fermi-Dirac statistics, we require that

$$P \psi_0 = (-1)^P \psi_0$$



where  $P$  is an operator which permutes the indices of the coordinates, and  $p$  is the parity of this permutation. The state in (4) is necessarily antisymmetric under interchange of all the coordinates of two particles.  $He^4$  obeys Bose statistics and has a wave function symmetric under interchange of the coordinates of two particles

$$P_{\text{Bose}} \psi_0 = (+1)^D \psi_0 = \psi_0 .$$

We can use the ground state to obtain properties of the solid at finite temperature by superimposing phonons, and spin waves, or applying the molecular field theory of paramagnetism.

The potential (2) is characterized by a weak attraction at large  $r_{1j}$ , a minimum near  $1.122\sigma$ , and a strong repulsion inside  $r = \sigma$ . The two parameters  $\sigma$  and  $\epsilon$  can be assigned values to give good representations of the potentials between rare gas atoms, and fair approximations of other systems, such as nucleon-nucleon, nitrogen-nitrogen, etc. Hence we can consider a broad class of problems by reducing (1), (2) and (3) to dimensionless form. Following the discussion of Bernardes,<sup>1</sup> we define

$$\begin{aligned} \tilde{K}_1 &= \frac{\tilde{r}_1}{\sigma} , \\ \tilde{E}_0 &= E_0/\epsilon , \\ \tilde{r}_{1j} &= r_{1j}/\sigma , \\ \psi(\tilde{X}) &= \psi(\tilde{X}/\sigma) = \psi(\tilde{r}_1) , \\ \text{and} \quad \tilde{\nabla}^2 &= \sigma^2 \nabla^2 . \end{aligned} \tag{5}$$

---

<sup>1</sup>H. Bernardes, Theory of Solid He<sup>3</sup>, Helium Three (Edited by J. Daunt, Ohio State University Press, Columbus, Ohio, 1960) p. 115.





The last relationship is given by  $(1/\sigma^2) \partial^2 / \partial \tilde{x}_1^2 [\psi(\tilde{x}_1 \sigma)] = \partial^2 / \partial x_1^2 \psi(r_1)$ , where the Laplacian is schematically represented by the second partial derivative.

Using the definitions (5), (3) becomes

$$\begin{aligned} E &= \lambda^2 \tilde{\nabla}^2 \tilde{\psi}(\tilde{x}_1 \dots \tilde{x}_N) + \sum_{i,j} \frac{1}{2} \tilde{V}(\tilde{x}_1 \dots \tilde{x}_N) \tilde{\psi}(\tilde{x}_1 \dots \tilde{x}_N) \\ &= \tilde{E}_0 \tilde{\psi}(\tilde{x}_1 \dots \tilde{x}_N). \end{aligned} \quad (6)$$

where 
$$\lambda^2 = \frac{\hbar^2}{2m \sigma^2}$$

Equation (6) applies to any physical system described by the two parameter potential (2). The physical properties of a particular system are all contained in the parameter  $\lambda$  and the definition of  $E_0$ . Values of  $\lambda$  for various substances are: xenon,  $7 \times 10^{-3}$ ; neon,  $7 \times 10^{-2}$ ;  $\text{He}^4$ , 0.347;  $\text{He}^3$ , 0.302; neutron-proton interaction  $\lambda^2 = (20/(V_0 r_0^2))$ , ( $r_0$  = nuclear radius in fermis,  $V_0$  = potential depth in Mev,  $\lambda \approx 0.3$ ).

The ideal situation would permit a general form of  $\tilde{\psi}$ , with  $\lambda$  as a continuous parameter, but no such simplified solution has been obtained for (6).

In the limiting case in which  $\lambda^2 \ll 1$ , where the quantum aspects of  $\psi$  can be neglected, we obtain

$$\tilde{E}_0 = \sum_{i,j} \frac{1}{2} \tilde{V}(\tilde{x}_1 \dots \tilde{x}_N), \lambda^2 \ll 1. \quad (7)$$

In this case, the energy of the ground state is the potential energy lattice sum. The expression (7) is valid for most solids, and

Die erste Gleichung ist die Gleichung der Tangente an den Punkt  $P(x_0, y_0)$  der Kurve  $C$ . Die zweite Gleichung ist die Gleichung der Normalen an den Punkt  $P(x_0, y_0)$  der Kurve  $C$ . Die dritte Gleichung ist die Gleichung der Tangente an den Punkt  $P(x_0, y_0)$  der Kurve  $C$ .

Die Gleichung der Tangente an den Punkt  $P(x_0, y_0)$  der Kurve  $C$  ist

$$(x - x_0) \cdot f'_x(x_0, y_0) + (y - y_0) \cdot f'_y(x_0, y_0) = 0$$

(1) 
$$(x - x_0) \cdot f'_x(x_0, y_0) + (y - y_0) \cdot f'_y(x_0, y_0) = 0$$

$$\frac{y - y_0}{x - x_0} = -\frac{f'_x(x_0, y_0)}{f'_y(x_0, y_0)}$$

Die Gleichung der Normalen an den Punkt  $P(x_0, y_0)$  der Kurve  $C$  ist

$$(x - x_0) \cdot f'_y(x_0, y_0) - (y - y_0) \cdot f'_x(x_0, y_0) = 0$$

Die Gleichung der Tangente an den Punkt  $P(x_0, y_0)$  der Kurve  $C$  ist

$$(x - x_0) \cdot f'_x(x_0, y_0) + (y - y_0) \cdot f'_y(x_0, y_0) = 0$$

Die Gleichung der Normalen an den Punkt  $P(x_0, y_0)$  der Kurve  $C$  ist

$$(x - x_0) \cdot f'_y(x_0, y_0) - (y - y_0) \cdot f'_x(x_0, y_0) = 0$$

Die Gleichung der Tangente an den Punkt  $P(x_0, y_0)$  der Kurve  $C$  ist

$$(x - x_0) \cdot f'_x(x_0, y_0) + (y - y_0) \cdot f'_y(x_0, y_0) = 0$$

Die Gleichung der Normalen an den Punkt  $P(x_0, y_0)$  der Kurve  $C$  ist

$$(x - x_0) \cdot f'_y(x_0, y_0) - (y - y_0) \cdot f'_x(x_0, y_0) = 0$$

Die Gleichung der Tangente an den Punkt  $P(x_0, y_0)$  der Kurve  $C$  ist

$$(x - x_0) \cdot f'_x(x_0, y_0) + (y - y_0) \cdot f'_y(x_0, y_0) = 0$$

Die Gleichung der Normalen an den Punkt  $P(x_0, y_0)$  der Kurve  $C$  ist

$$(x - x_0) \cdot f'_y(x_0, y_0) - (y - y_0) \cdot f'_x(x_0, y_0) = 0$$

(2) 
$$(x - x_0) \cdot f'_x(x_0, y_0) + (y - y_0) \cdot f'_y(x_0, y_0) = 0$$

Die Gleichung der Tangente an den Punkt  $P(x_0, y_0)$  der Kurve  $C$  ist

$$(x - x_0) \cdot f'_x(x_0, y_0) + (y - y_0) \cdot f'_y(x_0, y_0) = 0$$

Die Gleichung der Normalen an den Punkt  $P(x_0, y_0)$  der Kurve  $C$  ist

$$(x - x_0) \cdot f'_y(x_0, y_0) - (y - y_0) \cdot f'_x(x_0, y_0) = 0$$

ordinary lattice dynamics, including quantized sound fields, start with (7) and Newton's second law.

For larger  $\lambda$ , the kinetic energy term of (6) (the zero-point energy) is an important part of the energy operator. The theories of liquid helium and nuclear matter have the common central problem of the handling of the kinetic energy term simultaneously with the two-particle potential. Solid  $\text{He}^3$  and  $\text{He}^4$  share this difficulty.

#### Theories of Solid Helium Four

Several authors have considered the dynamics of solid  $\text{He}^4$ . A brief description of their work pertinent to our problem is given here.

(a) Hooton<sup>2</sup> has considered the shape of the potential around the lattice site. The zero-point motion expands the solid so that the nearest interparticle distance lies outside the minimum of the two-particle potential. The resultant lattice sum shows strong anharmonicity. Hooton approximates the resulting well by a harmonic oscillator potential through a variational calculation in the thermodynamic free energy. His results give the thermodynamic properties of a severely anharmonic lattice with large zero point energy. Application of his results in workable form is hindered by the necessity of making Debye-type approximations. Quantum symmetry effects cannot be obtained from his model.

(b) Zucker<sup>3</sup> has also considered the detailed shape of the

---

<sup>2</sup>D. J. Hooton, Phil. Mag. 46, 422 (1955); Phil. Mag. 46, 433 (1955); Phil. Mag. 46, 435 (1955).

<sup>3</sup>I. J. Zucker, Proc. Phys. Soc. (London) 73, 965 (1959).

the results of the analysis of the data are given in Table 1.

and the results are given in Table 2.

Table 1. Results of the analysis of the data for the first series of experiments.

The results of the analysis of the data for the second series of experiments are given in Table 3.

Table 3. Results of the analysis of the data for the second series of experiments.

Table 4. Results of the analysis of the data for the third series of experiments.

Table 5. Results of the analysis of the data for the fourth series of experiments.

### REFERENCES

1. V. A. Kiselev, *Tr. Vsesoyuznogo nauchnogo issledovaniya*, No. 1, 1964.

2. V. A. Kiselev, *Tr. Vsesoyuznogo nauchnogo issledovaniya*, No. 2, 1965.

3. V. A. Kiselev, *Tr. Vsesoyuznogo nauchnogo issledovaniya*, No. 3, 1966.

4. V. A. Kiselev, *Tr. Vsesoyuznogo nauchnogo issledovaniya*, No. 4, 1967.

5. V. A. Kiselev, *Tr. Vsesoyuznogo nauchnogo issledovaniya*, No. 5, 1968.

6. V. A. Kiselev, *Tr. Vsesoyuznogo nauchnogo issledovaniya*, No. 6, 1969.

7. V. A. Kiselev, *Tr. Vsesoyuznogo nauchnogo issledovaniya*, No. 7, 1970.

8. V. A. Kiselev, *Tr. Vsesoyuznogo nauchnogo issledovaniya*, No. 8, 1971.

9. V. A. Kiselev, *Tr. Vsesoyuznogo nauchnogo issledovaniya*, No. 9, 1972.

10. V. A. Kiselev, *Tr. Vsesoyuznogo nauchnogo issledovaniya*, No. 10, 1973.

11. V. A. Kiselev, *Tr. Vsesoyuznogo nauchnogo issledovaniya*, No. 11, 1974.

12. V. A. Kiselev, *Tr. Vsesoyuznogo nauchnogo issledovaniya*, No. 12, 1975.

13. V. A. Kiselev, *Tr. Vsesoyuznogo nauchnogo issledovaniya*, No. 13, 1976.

14. V. A. Kiselev, *Tr. Vsesoyuznogo nauchnogo issledovaniya*, No. 14, 1977.

15. V. A. Kiselev, *Tr. Vsesoyuznogo nauchnogo issledovaniya*, No. 15, 1978.



potential well from the lattice sum. He expands the potential about the lattice point (0, 0, 0) as follows:

$$W = W_0 + W_2(x^2 + y^2 + z^2) + W_4(x^4 + y^4 + z^4) + W_6(x^6 + y^6 + z^6),$$

thus ignoring terms like  $x^2 y^2$ , in order to keep the problem separable.

In this expression,

$$W_0 = \frac{1}{2} \sum_r \phi(r)$$

$$W_2 = \frac{1}{2} \sum_r [\phi^{11}(r) + \frac{2}{r} \phi^1(r)]$$

$$W_4 = \frac{1}{72} \sum_r [\phi^{4V}(r) + \frac{4}{r} \phi^{111}(r)]$$

$$W_6 = \frac{1}{2160} \sum_r [\phi^{VI}(r) + \frac{6}{r} \phi^V(r)]$$

where  $\phi(r)$  is the two-particle potential. The problem can be solved as a superposition of three one-dimensional anharmonic oscillators, using  $W_0$ ,  $W_2$  and  $W_4$ .

Zucker obtains an equation of state

$$P = - \left. \frac{\partial W_0}{\partial V} \right|_T - \frac{\partial E_0}{\partial V},$$

where  $E_0$  represents the zero-point energy, and is a complicated function of  $W_2$  and  $W_4$ . As Zucker points out, his result is unsatisfactory; it is based on an Einstein model and therefore ignores the effects of neighbors other than through the idealized potential. This consideration is in addition to the separability approximation made above.

(c) Dugdale and MacDonald<sup>4</sup> calculate the energy  $E(r)$  of a pair

---

<sup>4</sup>J. S. Dugdale and D. K. C. MacDonald, Phil. Mag. 45, 811 (1954).



of adjacent atoms separated by a distance  $(\Lambda)$  in a rare gas solid. They assume a Lennard-Jones type potential energy, with a first-order correction for anharmonicity effects. They further assume that the kinetic energy contribution to the total energy is proportional to the Debye temperature. The Debye temperature is assumed, in turn, to be proportional to  $(d^2E/dr^2)^{1/2}$ . Using these assumptions, they obtain good predictions of pressure vs volume relationships and cohesive energy for the heavy rare gases, and order-of-magnitude results for He<sup>4</sup>.

They find that

$$\frac{M \theta^2 V_0^{2/3}}{E_0} = 1.14 \times 10^3$$

$M$  = molar mass, grams/mole

$V_0$  = molar volume, cm<sup>3</sup>/mole

$E_0$  = molar energy, cal /mole

$$\theta = \frac{6}{2\pi} \frac{h}{r} \left( \frac{1}{n} \frac{d^2 E}{dr^2} \right)^{1/2} \text{ } ^\circ \text{K (Debye temperature, } \theta = \text{lattice parameter} \approx \text{unity}).$$

The value  $1.14 \times 10^{-3}$  matches experimental values for Xe, Kr, Ar, Ne and He<sup>4</sup>, with a maximum error of 2%.

The work of Hooton,<sup>2</sup> Zucker,<sup>3</sup> and Dugdale and MacDonald<sup>4</sup> shows clearly that thermal excitations cannot be treated by straight application of the Debye theory of specific heats, and that the lattice specific heat at low temperatures must come from a more fundamental consideration of the dispersion law for sound waves in the solid. Their results include the effect of the zero-point motion, but they do not include a description





of more than one atom in the lattice dynamics (other than through collective motion in sound waves). In other words, they do not include the effect of motions of the neighbors of a particular atom on the potential of that atom that arises from the neighbors.

### Theories of Solid Helium Three

The theory of solid  $\text{He}^3$  has been considered by Bernardes and Primakoff<sup>5</sup> (hereafter termed B.P.) and by Bernardes.<sup>6</sup>

(a) Bernardes and Primakoff (Haitler-London approach)

In approaching the solution to (1), B.P. used the potential (2), and a variational wave function consisting of a product of Gaussian functions centered at lattice points:

$$\psi_0 = \prod_j \text{const } e^{-\frac{\sigma^2}{2} \frac{r_j^2}{r_{1j}^2}} = \prod_j \phi_j(r_j'). \quad (8)$$

If  $\psi_0$  is used to evaluate the energy expectation value, the singularity in the potential function yields an infinite result. To avoid this difficulty, B.P. modify the potential by a factor which gives the limit zero as  $r_{1j}$  goes to zero. Their effective potential is

$$V_{\text{eff}}(r_{1j}) = k_0 \left[ \left( \frac{\sigma}{r_{1j}} \right)^{12} - \left( \frac{\sigma}{r_{1j}} \right)^6 \right] e^{-\frac{c \sigma^{10}}{r_{1j}^{10}}} \quad (9)$$

The cut-off factor  $\exp(-c \sigma^{10}/r_{1j}^{10})$  is chosen for computational convenience. The value of  $c$  is estimated by calculating known properties of  $\text{He}^4$  using (9), with various values of  $c$ , until the best fit is

---

<sup>5</sup>H. Bernardes and H. Primakoff, Phys. Rev. 119, 963 (1960).

<sup>6</sup>H. Bernardes, Phys. Rev. 120, 1927 (1960).





obtained. In particular, the cohesive energy and root-mean-square deviation of atoms from lattice sites for  $\text{He}^4$  were calculated by a variational calculation using the parameter  $\alpha$ . The value of  $\alpha$  that gave the most consistent results in these calculations was then assumed to apply equally well to  $\text{He}^3$ . Using this assumption, they obtain the expectation value of (1) for the  $\text{He}^3$  mass:

$$\begin{aligned}
 K(V, \alpha) = & N \int d^3 \vec{r}_1 \phi^*(\vec{r}_1) \left[ -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \nabla^2 \right] \phi(\vec{r}_1) \\
 & + \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i \neq j}^N \iint d^3 \vec{r}_1 d^3 \vec{r}_2 \phi^*(\vec{r}_1) \phi^*(\vec{r}_2) \\
 & \times V_{\text{eff}}(|\vec{R}_i - \vec{R}_j - \vec{r}_1 + \vec{r}_2|) \phi(\vec{r}_1) \phi(\vec{r}_2) \\
 = & N \epsilon W_0 + N \epsilon U_0
 \end{aligned} \tag{10}$$

where  $\vec{r}_1$  is the coordinate of particle 1 in a frame with  $\vec{R}_1$ , the position of the lattice point 1, as origin, and the integration is performed over all space. The specific volume  $V$  enters through  $\vec{R}_i - \vec{R}_j$ . The assumption has been made that the effect of introducing symmetry into the wave function has a small effect on  $K$  and its variations. B.P. use the condition

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial \alpha} K = 0$$

to find  $K$ .

Having found a value for  $\alpha$  as a function of volume, B.P. form a symmetrized wave function and calculate an exchange energy:



$$\begin{aligned}
J &= \iint d^3 \vec{r}_1 d^3 \vec{r}_2 \phi^*(\vec{r}_2 - \vec{R}_{12}) \phi^*(\vec{r}_1) \\
&\times \left[ -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} (\nabla_1^2 + \nabla_2^2) + V_{\text{eff}}(|\vec{r}_2 - \vec{r}_1|) \right] \phi(\vec{r}_1 - \vec{R}_{12}) \phi(\vec{r}_2) \\
&\equiv J_W + J_U.
\end{aligned} \tag{11}$$

Here  $\vec{R}_{12}$  is the vector between nearest neighbor lattice points,  $J_U$  is the kinetic energy part of the integral, and  $J_W$  is the potential energy part.

B.P. find that  $J_U = 3.2 \times 10^{-3}e$  and  $J_W = -5.4 \times 10^{-3}e$ , with  $J = -2.2 \times 10^{-3}e = -0.02^\circ K$ .

From their values of  $E$  and  $J$ , B.P. then proceed to obtain values for specific heat, entropy, susceptibility, and other thermodynamic properties of the solid.

There are no satisfying supporting physical arguments for the effective potential used by B.P., and for their assumption that the observed behavior of  $\text{He}^4$  matches that of  $\text{He}^3$  (through the constant  $c$  in the effective potential factor). The multiplying factor in the potential energy  $\exp(\sigma^{10} c r^{-10})$  is designed to circumvent this difficulty. However, correlation effects outside  $2.6\text{\AA}$ , although important, are not included. Other questions arise which are open to discussion:

(1) The product of single-particle orbitals used by B.P. does not include particle correlations properly. This fault of the single-particle function has been discussed by many authors.<sup>7</sup> The difficulty can be understood by considering

---

<sup>7</sup>R. K. Mesbet, Revs. Modern Phys. 33, 28 (1961) discusses the correlation problem and gives many references.

١٠ - لا يجوز ما في قوله - في قوله -

لا يجوز ما في قوله - في قوله -

لا يجوز ما في قوله - في قوله -

لا يجوز ما في قوله - في قوله -

لا يجوز ما في قوله - في قوله -

لا يجوز ما في قوله - في قوله -

لا يجوز ما في قوله - في قوله -

لا يجوز ما في قوله - في قوله -

لا يجوز ما في قوله - في قوله -



$$\langle V_{12} \rangle = \int \phi_1^*(1) \phi_2^*(2) V_{12}(r_{12}) \phi_1(1) \phi_2(2) d\tau_1 d\tau_2. \quad (12)$$

If the single-particle orbitals have any region of overlap at all, and  $V_{12}(r_{12})$  has a singularity stronger than  $1/r^2$ , then  $\langle V_{12} \rangle$  is infinite, contrary to physical actuality. This consideration sheds doubt particularly on the computed exchange integral, which is determined by the behavior of the wave function in regions of overlap.

(2) B.P. performed their calculations assuming a face-centered cubic lattice. They make the conjecture that their numerical values apply at least semiquantitatively to the body-centered cubic configuration. However, since the exchange integral is highly sensitive to particle separation, their calculation of exchange is much less likely to be applicable to both lattice structures at once than their calculation of cohesive energy.

(3) The form of spin-lattice structure in an antiferromagnetic crystal is sensitive to the exchange integral with nearest and next nearest neighbors.<sup>8</sup> In a body-centered cubic lattice, the next nearest neighbors are only 15% farther removed than the nearest neighbors, and the exchange energy with both nearest and next nearest neighbors can be of the same order of magnitude. At temperatures high compared to the Neel temperature, the susceptibility is given by the Curie-Weiss law,  $\chi = C/(T + T_C)$ . The Curie temperature  $T_C$  is given by the energy change in a spin flip, including interactions with all neighbors. (In Chapter V there is further discussion of magnetic effects.)

---

<sup>8</sup>J. H. Van Vleck. J. phys. radium 12, 262 (1951).





## (b) Bernardes (Non-overlapping Wave Function approach)

Bernardes<sup>9,10</sup> has considered  $\text{He}^3$  and  $\text{He}^4$  from the point of view of non-overlapping single-particle orbitals. The functions chosen are square-well orbitals, and Bernardes calculates the integral

$$V = \sum_i \sum_j \int \phi_i^*(1) \phi_j^*(j) V_{ij}(|\vec{r}_1 - \vec{r}_j|) \phi_i(1) \phi_j(j) d\tau_1 d\tau_j, \quad (13)$$

using

$$\phi_i(\xi_i) = \left( \frac{\pi}{2a^3} \right)^{1/2} \frac{\sin(\pi \sigma \xi_i / a)}{(\pi \sigma \xi_i / a)} \quad \xi_i < a/\sigma$$

$$\phi_i(\xi_i) = 0 \quad \xi_i \geq a/\sigma \quad (14)$$

He obtains a series in  $(a/\sigma)$  for  $\langle H \rangle = \langle T \rangle + \langle V \rangle$ , and minimizing  $\langle H \rangle$ , obtains a value for  $a$ . The series expansion coefficients are different for body-centered cubic and face-centered cubic lattices.

Hence Bernardes can declare one lattice or the other most stable. He finds that both  $\text{He}^3$  and  $\text{He}^4$  assume closest packing, whereas experimentally  $\text{He}^3$  is body-centered cubic, and  $\text{He}^4$  is hexagonal close-packed.

The integral (13), although it is finite, still overestimates the potential energy. The true wave function gives a different probability density describing particle "a" for each assumed position of particle "b". The simple product wave function gives a distribution function for particle

<sup>9</sup>N. Bernardes, Phys. Rev. 112, 1534 (1958).

<sup>10</sup>N. Bernardes, Phys. Rev. 120, 1927 (1960).



"a", in a form showing no dependence on the position of particle "b".  
This shortcoming prevents an accurate estimate of average potential energy, except in the limit of large separation.

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO PRESS

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS 60607

1990

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS 60607

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS 60607

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS 60607

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS 60607

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS 60607

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS 60607

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS 60607

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS 60607

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS 60607

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS 60607

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS 60607

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS 60607

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS 60607

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS 60607

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS 60607

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS 60607

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS 60607

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS 60607

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS 60607



## CHAPTER III

### A WAVE FUNCTION WITH CORRELATIONS

#### THE PLAVINAGE METHOD

#### Meaning of Particle Correlations

An elementary discussion will clarify the meaning of the term "particle correlations."

The usual description of a many-body system in coordinate space is a product of single-particle orbitals (hereafter called S.P.O.),

$$\bar{\Psi} = \prod_{i=1}^N \phi_i(\vec{r}_i). \quad (1)$$

Here, the form of the  $\phi$ 's is determined by the boundary conditions imposed on the system and by the Schrödinger equation.

In (1), we have ignored symmetry requirements. We merely state that correlations resulting from the Pauli exclusion principle are not our concern in this section.<sup>1</sup> The product (1) is the wave function of the Hartree approximation and is the wave function of B.P.<sup>2</sup> (apart from symmetrizations). This type of function can be used to describe exactly the state of  $N$  non-interacting particles, and can be used as a variational

---

<sup>1</sup>To be precise, this product must be constructed to give a definite symmetry under interchange of particle coordinates. The results of this section are unchanged if we include symmetry by writing  $\bar{\Psi} = \sum_P P \phi_1(\vec{r}_1)$ , where  $P$  permutes the indices of  $\vec{r}_i$ , assigns the proper sign (+ or -) to the permutation, and normalizes the product. The spin variable, if any, is included in  $\vec{r}_i$ . The symbol  $\vec{r}_i$  will be consistently used to represent space coordinates only.

<sup>2</sup>H. Bernardes and H. Primkoff, Phys. Rev. 119, 968 (1960).

# THE STATE

## THE STATE OF THE UNION AND THE STATE OF THE WORLD

### THE STATE OF THE UNION

THE STATE OF THE UNION IS A STATE OF THE UNION

THE STATE OF THE UNION

THE STATE OF THE UNION IS A STATE OF THE UNION

THE STATE OF THE UNION IS A STATE OF THE UNION

$$(1) \quad \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{2} \right) = 1$$

THE STATE OF THE UNION IS A STATE OF THE UNION

THE STATE OF THE UNION IS A STATE OF THE UNION

THE STATE OF THE UNION IS A STATE OF THE UNION

THE STATE OF THE UNION IS A STATE OF THE UNION

THE STATE OF THE UNION IS A STATE OF THE UNION

THE STATE OF THE UNION IS A STATE OF THE UNION

THE STATE OF THE UNION IS A STATE OF THE UNION

THE STATE OF THE UNION IS A STATE OF THE UNION

THE STATE OF THE UNION

THE STATE OF THE UNION IS A STATE OF THE UNION

THE STATE OF THE UNION IS A STATE OF THE UNION

THE STATE OF THE UNION IS A STATE OF THE UNION

THE STATE OF THE UNION IS A STATE OF THE UNION

THE STATE OF THE UNION IS A STATE OF THE UNION

THE STATE OF THE UNION IS A STATE OF THE UNION

THE STATE OF THE UNION IS A STATE OF THE UNION

starting point for interacting particles. In general, (1) fails for strongly interacting, dense systems.

Lee, Huang, and Yang,<sup>3</sup> in their analysis of strongly-interacting (hard-sphere) particles, use (1) in a particular form:

$$\phi = \sum_{k_1, k_2, k_3, \dots, k_N} C(k_1, k_2, k_3, \dots, k_N) U_{k_1}(\vec{r}_1) U_{k_2}(\vec{r}_2) \dots U_{k_N}(\vec{r}_N). \quad (2)$$

Here the  $U_k(\vec{r})$  are a complete orthonormal set of wave functions. The coefficients  $C$  carry the symmetry of the wave function. This function can be used to calculate the hard-core problem, if many different combinations of  $k_i$  are used. Lee, Huang, and Yang transfer (2) to a representation expressed by occupation numbers in  $k$  space. They perform a variational calculation, valid at low densities. In a crystal order the solution in  $k$  space must transform to a solution in  $r$  space showing crystalline order. This operation has not been successfully performed. Besides failing to demonstrate crystalline order, the theory of Lee, Huang, and Yang is valid for dilute systems only and invalid for systems as dense as the one under consideration here.

To help describe a state showing crystal symmetry we keep the basic description in coordinate space. We use a less drastic separation of  $\Phi$  than (7) and include a functional dependence on the mutual separation of the particles,

$$\Phi = \prod_{i > j} \phi_{ij}(\vec{r}_i, \vec{r}_j). \quad (3)$$

---

<sup>3</sup> F. D. Lee, K. Huang, and C. N. Yang, Phys. Rev. 106, 1135 (1957).

THE STATE OF TEXAS, COUNTY OF DALLAS, ss. I, the undersigned, a Notary Public in and for the State of Texas, do hereby certify that the within and foregoing instrument is a true and correct copy of the original instrument filed for record in my office on this 1st day of January, 1901.

WITNESSETH MY HAND AND SEAL OF OFFICE, this 1st day of January, 1901.

NOTARY PUBLIC IN AND FOR THE STATE OF TEXAS.

My commission expires on the 1st day of January, 1902.

100

THE STATE OF TEXAS, COUNTY OF DALLAS, ss. I, the undersigned, a Notary Public in and for the State of Texas, do hereby certify that the within and foregoing instrument is a true and correct copy of the original instrument filed for record in my office on this 1st day of January, 1901.

WITNESSETH MY HAND AND SEAL OF OFFICE, this 1st day of January, 1901.

NOTARY PUBLIC IN AND FOR THE STATE OF TEXAS.

My commission expires on the 1st day of January, 1902.

THE STATE OF TEXAS, COUNTY OF DALLAS, ss. I, the undersigned, a Notary Public in and for the State of Texas, do hereby certify that the within and foregoing instrument is a true and correct copy of the original instrument filed for record in my office on this 1st day of January, 1901.

WITNESSETH MY HAND AND SEAL OF OFFICE, this 1st day of January, 1901.

NOTARY PUBLIC IN AND FOR THE STATE OF TEXAS.

My commission expires on the 1st day of January, 1902.

THE STATE OF TEXAS, COUNTY OF DALLAS, ss. I, the undersigned, a Notary Public in and for the State of Texas, do hereby certify that the within and foregoing instrument is a true and correct copy of the original instrument filed for record in my office on this 1st day of January, 1901.

WITNESSETH MY HAND AND SEAL OF OFFICE, this 1st day of January, 1901.

NOTARY PUBLIC IN AND FOR THE STATE OF TEXAS.

My commission expires on the 1st day of January, 1902.

THE STATE OF TEXAS, COUNTY OF DALLAS, ss. I, the undersigned, a Notary Public in and for the State of Texas, do hereby certify that the within and foregoing instrument is a true and correct copy of the original instrument filed for record in my office on this 1st day of January, 1901.

WITNESSETH MY HAND AND SEAL OF OFFICE, this 1st day of January, 1901.

NOTARY PUBLIC IN AND FOR THE STATE OF TEXAS.

My commission expires on the 1st day of January, 1902.

THE STATE OF TEXAS, COUNTY OF DALLAS, ss. I, the undersigned, a Notary Public in and for the State of Texas, do hereby certify that the within and foregoing instrument is a true and correct copy of the original instrument filed for record in my office on this 1st day of January, 1901.

WITNESSETH MY HAND AND SEAL OF OFFICE, this 1st day of January, 1901.

NOTARY PUBLIC IN AND FOR THE STATE OF TEXAS.

My commission expires on the 1st day of January, 1902.



We study equation (3) by considering in some detail the behavior of two interacting particles in a box.

The usual interpretation of the probability density corresponds to a contour map, with the frequency of observation of a particle as the elevation, and the position of the observation as the location on the map. The "map" should, of course, show conditions in a 3-dimensional solid, rather than conditions on a plane.

In Fig. 1(a), we show, in a qualitative presentation, the probability density for two particles contained in a spherical well of infinite potential and radius  $r_a$ . The curves show the "elevations" along a line drawn through the "map." The state is represented by  $\phi_1(\vec{r}_1) \phi_2(\vec{r}_2)$ . The configuration is intended to represent the state of lowest energy (ground state) in the S.P.O. approximation obtained, for example, by the Hartree-Fock method. If Fig. 1(a) has validity, it must correspond to weakly interacting particles. We have already seen, in the case of B.P., that, if we calculate a potential energy value using a S.P.O. wave function, difficulty can arise. In the integral

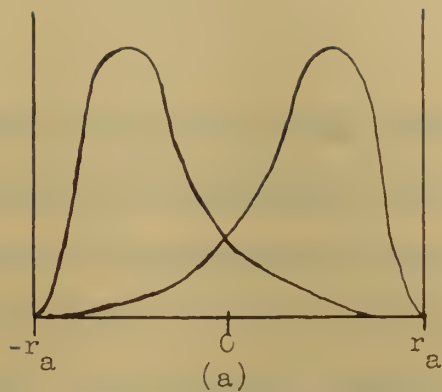
$$\langle V \rangle = \int_{v_1} \int_{v_2} |\phi_1(\vec{r}_1)|^2 |\phi_2(\vec{r}_1 + \vec{r}_{12})|^2 V(|\vec{r}_{12}|) d^3\vec{r}_{12} d^3\vec{r}_1,$$

we assume  $V = A|\vec{r}_{12}|^{-n}$ . For  $n > 2$ , the integral diverges if  $\phi_1$  and  $\phi_2$  overlap anywhere. In the present case there is complete overlap, and  $n = 12$ , so that Fig 1(a) cannot represent helium atoms.

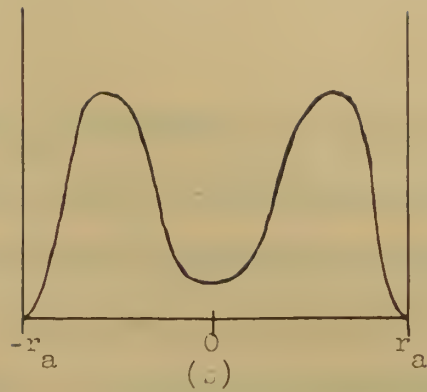
We next improve the description by retaining a general functional dependence on the positions of both particles, writing  $\bar{\Phi} = \psi(\vec{r}_1, \vec{r}_2) = \psi(1, 2)$ . We cannot separate  $\psi(1, 2)$  into a product of  $\phi_1(\vec{r}_1)\phi_2(\vec{r}_2)$ .



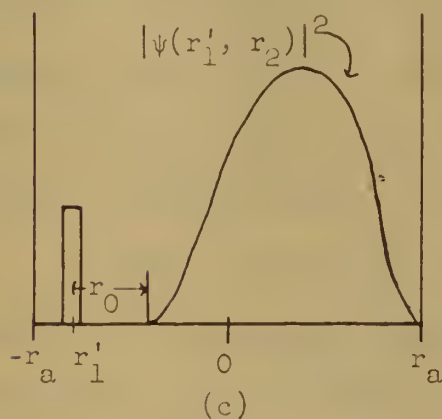




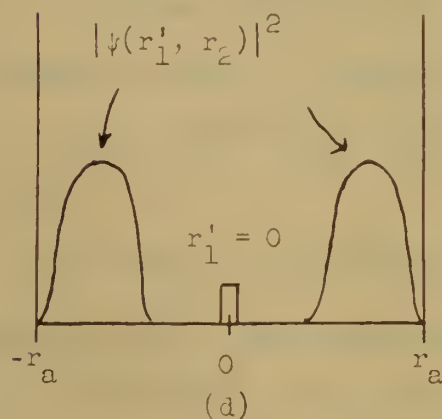
Two particle density  
S.P.O. approximation



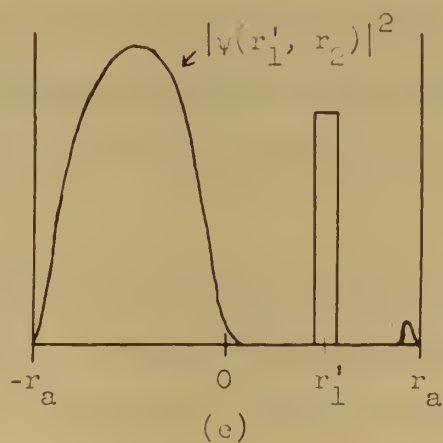
Correlated single particle  
density,  $f(1')$



Correlated two particle  
density, particle 1 at  $r'_1$



Correlated two particle  
density, particle 1 at  $r'_1$



Correlated two particle  
density, particle 1 at  $r'_1$

Figure 1. Particle Correlations



In Figs. 1(b), 1(c), 1(d), and 1(e), using this function, we show how the "contour map" concept must be modified. To draw the curves, we must think of a whole series of maps, where each map corresponds to a particular position of one of the particles, and displays a distribution function for the other particle. (We think of the figures representing a system with the exponent  $n > 2$ , weakly attractive outside  $r_{1j} = r_0$ .)

In Fig. 1(b), we show the probability of finding particle ((1)) [hereafter labeled simply ((1))], at  $\vec{r}_1'$ , [hereafter labeled (1')], regardless of the position of ((2)). We employ the Dirac  $\delta$  function to locate ((1)) in  $d^3\vec{r}_1$  at  $\vec{r}_1'$ , and write  $\int |\psi(1, 2)|^2 \delta(\vec{r}_1 - \vec{r}_1') d^3\vec{r}_1 d^3\vec{r}_2 = \int |\psi(1', 2)|^2 d^3\vec{r}_2 = f(1')$ . We plot  $f(1')$ .

In Figs. 1(c), 1(d), and 1(e), we illustrate the probability distribution of ((2)), when ((1)) is localized at (1'). This distribution is given by  $\int |\psi(1, 2)|^2 \delta(\vec{r}_1 - \vec{r}_1') d^3(\vec{r}_1) = |\psi(1', 2)|^2$ . The particle at (1') is shown as a heavy vertical bar of height  $f(1')$ , to illustrate the relative probability of each of the maps 1(c), 1(d), and 1(e). The diameter chosen as abscissa is the diameter through (1'). Particle ((2)) is distributed with cylindrical symmetry about this diameter. Hence, the normalizations of Figs. 1(c), 1(d), and 1(e) are related in a complicated way.

In constructing the figures we have assumed a strongly repulsive interaction of radius  $r_0$ . If the interactions were weak everywhere, the representation 1(a) would introduce a smaller correlation error.

For three and more particles, we proceed in the same fashion, but with a new set of maps for each additional particle. For example, with





three particles, Figs. 1(c), 1(d), and 1(e) can represent the configuration of ((1)) and ((2)) for a given position (3') of ((3)). We can write the three-particle function as  $\psi(1, 2, 3)$ , a three-particle orbital; as  $\psi(1, 2) \psi(2, 3) \psi(1, 3)$ , the two-particle approximation; or as  $\phi(1) \phi(2) \phi(3)$ , the single-particle approximation. In the spirit of providing an improvement to the S.P.O., and since we will have no three-particle interactions to deal with, our work uses the two-particle approximation

$$\bar{\Phi}(1, 2, 3) = \psi(1, 2) \psi(2, 3) \psi(1, 3),$$

or, in general

$$\bar{\Phi}(1, 2, 3; \dots N) = \prod_{1 > j} \psi(\vec{r}_1, \vec{r}_j).$$

#### Use of the Interparticle Coordinate to Provide Correlation Effects

The methods previously applied to the ground state of solid  $\text{He}^3$ , which include a description of the ground state (for example, B.P.), express correlations through a product of single-particle orbitals. As described in Chapter II, such a description fails in the case of a potential with a strong singularity at the origin. Including the interparticle distance in the state function would remove this objection. The two-particle function of Chapter II offers a way of doing this.

Previous work has considered this problem. In parallel calculations of the temperature dependence of the susceptibility liquid  $\text{He}^3$ ,



Price<sup>4</sup> introduced a fixed interparticle distance, and Rice<sup>5</sup> assumed a hard-core repulsion.

Jastrow,<sup>6</sup> Aviles,<sup>7</sup> Iwamoto,<sup>8</sup> and Drachman,<sup>9</sup> have developed a variational method (the Jastrow method) using a trial function  $\prod_1 \phi_1(\vec{r}_1)$   $\prod_{1 > j} f_{ij}(\vec{r}_1 - \vec{r}_j)$ .<sup>10</sup> This function resembles the  $\prod_{1 > j} \psi(\vec{r}, \vec{r})$  of the last section. The Jastrow method includes a series expansion in cluster integrals similar to those used in obtaining the partition function in classical statistical mechanics of dense systems.<sup>11</sup> The cluster method of obtaining the variational parameter  $\epsilon$  is unsuited to the solid state because it assumes liquid disorder, and therefore the Jastrow method will not serve our needs. However, the method has points of similarity with our method, and we will return to it later.

Brueckner<sup>12</sup> has developed a method for including two-particle interactions correctly to arbitrary order. The theory is a scattering

<sup>4</sup>P. J. Price, Phys. Rev. 27, 259 (1955).

<sup>5</sup>O. K. Rice, Phys. Rev. 27, 263 (1955).

<sup>6</sup>R. Jastrow, Phys. Rev. 98, 1479 (1955).

<sup>7</sup>J. D. Aviles, Jr., Ann. Phys. 5, 251 (1958).

<sup>8</sup>F. Iwamoto, Prog. Theoret. Phys. (Kyoto) 19, 597 (1958).

F. Iwamoto and M. Yamada, Prog. Theoret. Phys. (Kyoto) 17, 543 (1957).

<sup>9</sup>R. J. Drachman, Phys. Rev. 121, 643 (1961).

<sup>10</sup>The author is indebted to Professor Walter Kohn for pointing out the connection between the present work and the approach of 6, 7, 8, 9.

<sup>11</sup>J. F. Mayer and M. G. Mayer, Statistical Mechanics (Wiley and Sons, Inc., New York, 1940) p. 277.

<sup>12</sup>H. A. Bethe, Phys. Rev. 103, 1353 (1956).

There is a certain amount of evidence to suggest that the

results of the present study are in line with those of

other studies in this area, and that the findings are

consistent with the theoretical framework proposed in the

introduction. The results of the present study are

consistent with the theoretical framework proposed in the

introduction. The results of the present study are

consistent with the theoretical framework proposed in the

introduction. The results of the present study are

consistent with the theoretical framework proposed in the

introduction. The results of the present study are

consistent with the theoretical framework proposed in the

introduction. The results of the present study are

consistent with the theoretical framework proposed in the

introduction. The results of the present study are

consistent with the theoretical framework proposed in the

introduction. The results of the present study are

consistent with the theoretical framework proposed in the

introduction. The results of the present study are

consistent with the theoretical framework proposed in the

introduction. The results of the present study are



theory, and includes an expansion similar to (2). A workable way of applying the Brueckner method to a solid has not been developed. The pseudopotential method<sup>2</sup> shares this disadvantage.

Pluvinage,<sup>13</sup> in studying the atomic spectrum of helium, used the set of coordinates introduced earlier by Hylleraas.<sup>14</sup> Pluvinage added the feature of including the interparticle distance explicitly in the zero-order Hamiltonian. The zero-order wave function is thus a function of the space coordinates of the particles, contains the interparticle distance, and cannot be separated into a product of single-particle functions. It possesses none of the disadvantages ascribed to other methods in the preceding paragraphs.

Using Pluvinage's method, Walsh and Borowitz<sup>15</sup> (hereafter termed W.B.) have considered the energy levels of several atoms and, in general, get better results in zero order than the more complicated first-order calculations usually performed with hydrogenic wave functions. The method can also be applied to our problem, with reasonable expectation of equally good results.

#### The Pluvinage Method

The Pluvinage method introduces the interparticle distance into the many-body Hamiltonian and wave function, yielding an exact formal

---

<sup>13</sup>P. Pluvinage, Ann. Phys. 5, 145 (1950).

<sup>14</sup>E. A. Hylleraas, Zeits. Physik 65, 209 (1930).

<sup>15</sup>P. Walsh and G. Borowitz, Phys. Rev. 115, 1206 (1959); Phys. Rev. 119, 1274 (1960).





expression which includes explicit dependence on all the interparticle distances, as well as the spatial positions of all the particles.

We write the many-body Hamiltonian:

$$H = - \sum_{i=1}^N \frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \nabla_i^2 + \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i,j} V_{ij}(r_{ij}) + \sum_i V_i(\vec{r}_i). \quad (4)$$

Here we describe  $N$  identical particles of mass  $m$ , interacting with the potential  $V(r_{ij})$ . We have already seen that we can take  $V(r_{ij})$  to be the Lennard-Jones potential

$$\begin{aligned} V(r_{ij}) &= 4\epsilon[(\sigma/r)^{12} - (\sigma/r)^6] \\ \epsilon &= 10.22^\circ \text{ K} \\ \sigma &= 2.556 \text{ \AA} \end{aligned} \quad (5)$$

$V(\vec{r}_i)$  is an externally applied potential, the same function of space for all particles.

We will now follow Plüvinage in introducing the interparticle distance into the Hamiltonian.

In any calculation involving  $n$  independent variables ( $u_1, v_1, w_1, u_2, v_2, w_2, \dots$ ), we can introduce another set of  $n$  variables ( $x_1, y_1, z_1, x_2, y_2, z_2, \dots$ ), related to the  $u^i$  by  $x^i = x^i(u^i)$ , and possibly simplify the calculation. We can even have  $m > n$ , provided that we also provide  $m - n$  independent constraints in the functions  $x^i(u^i)$ .

In Appendix A we show that the following statement is true:

If  $\psi_1(u^i) = \psi_1(u_1, v_1, w_1, u_2, \dots, v_N)$ , a function of the Cartesian coordinates ( $u_1, v_1, w_1$ ) of  $N$  particles in a system, we may set up



another function  $\psi_2(x^i) = \psi_2(x_1, y_1, z_1 \dots x_N y_N z_N, r_{12} r_{13} \dots r_{N-1,N})$ , which contains  $(N)(N-1)/2$  extra coordinates, and we may require that  $\psi_1(u^i) = \psi_2(x^i)$  everywhere in space. In order to do this, we must have  $(3N + (N)(N-1)/2)$  independent relations  $x^i = x^i(u^i)$ , and the rule of differentiation

$$\frac{\partial \psi_1}{\partial u^j} = \frac{\partial \psi_2}{\partial u^j} = \sum_{i=1}^n \frac{\partial x^i}{\partial u^j} \frac{\partial \psi_2}{\partial x^i}$$

In our case, the Hamiltonian contains the interparticle distances  $r_{ij}$ , so we are led to introduce them as extra coordinates.

We then have

$$\begin{aligned} x_1 &= u_1 & y_1 &= v_1 & z_1 &= w_1 \\ r_{12} &= \sqrt{(u_1 - u_2)^2 + (v_1 - v_2)^2 + (w_1 - w_2)^2} \end{aligned} \quad (6)$$

as the  $3N + N(N-1)/2$  independent relations.

In what follows, we shall use a wave function of the type  $\psi_2$ , which gives the same results as  $\psi_1$ , simply because we require  $\psi_1 = \psi_2$ . We shall find that  $\psi_2$  yields a useful natural separation.

We drop the distinction between  $x_i$  and  $u_i$ , but remember the special role the  $x$ 's play in the functional form of  $r_{12}$ . From Appendix A we have the rule of differentiation:

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial x_i} \rightarrow \frac{\partial}{\partial x_i} + \sum_j \frac{\partial r_{ij}}{\partial x_i} \frac{\partial}{\partial r_{ij}} \quad (7)$$

Here, to the right of the arrow, we speak of a  $\psi_2$  type of description, to the left,  $\psi_1$ .



Let  $f(x) = x^2 + 1$  and  $g(x) = x^2 + 2x + 1$ . Then  $f(x) + g(x) = 2x^2 + 2x + 2 = 2(x^2 + x + 1)$ . The polynomial  $x^2 + x + 1$  is irreducible over  $\mathbb{Q}$  because it has no rational roots. Hence  $f(x) + g(x)$  is irreducible over  $\mathbb{Q}$ .

$$x^2 + x + 1$$

Let  $f(x) = x^2 + 1$  and  $g(x) = x^2 + 2x + 1$ . Then  $f(x) + g(x) = 2x^2 + 2x + 2 = 2(x^2 + x + 1)$ . The polynomial  $x^2 + x + 1$  is irreducible over  $\mathbb{Q}$  because it has no rational roots. Hence  $f(x) + g(x)$  is irreducible over  $\mathbb{Q}$ .

(b)

$$\frac{x^2 + x + 1}{x^2 + x + 1} = 1$$

Let  $f(x) = x^2 + 1$  and  $g(x) = x^2 + 2x + 1$ . Then  $f(x) + g(x) = 2x^2 + 2x + 2 = 2(x^2 + x + 1)$ . The polynomial  $x^2 + x + 1$  is irreducible over  $\mathbb{Q}$  because it has no rational roots. Hence  $f(x) + g(x)$  is irreducible over  $\mathbb{Q}$ .

(c)

$$\frac{x^2 + x + 1}{x^2 + x + 1} = 1$$

Let  $f(x) = x^2 + 1$  and  $g(x) = x^2 + 2x + 1$ . Then  $f(x) + g(x) = 2x^2 + 2x + 2 = 2(x^2 + x + 1)$ . The polynomial  $x^2 + x + 1$  is irreducible over  $\mathbb{Q}$  because it has no rational roots. Hence  $f(x) + g(x)$  is irreducible over  $\mathbb{Q}$ .



From Appendix A, we have

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_i \nabla_i^2 \rightarrow \sum_i \nabla_i^2 + \sum_{i,j} \left[ \frac{\partial^2}{\partial r_{ij}^2} + \frac{2}{r_{ij}} \frac{\partial}{\partial r_{ij}} \right] \\ + \sum_{i \neq j} \frac{2 \vec{s}_{ij} \cdot \vec{\nabla}_{s,ij}}{r_{ij}} \frac{\partial}{\partial r_{ij}} + \sum_{i \neq j, k} \vec{s}_{ik} \cdot \vec{s}_{ij} \cdot \frac{\partial}{\partial r_{ik}} \frac{\partial}{\partial r_{ij}}. \quad (8) \end{aligned}$$

Here, we have put

$$\vec{\nabla}_{s,ij} = \frac{\partial}{\partial s_{x,ij}} \hat{x} + \frac{\partial}{\partial s_{y,ij}} \hat{y} + \frac{\partial}{\partial s_{z,ij}} \hat{z} \quad (9)$$

$$s_{x,ij} = (x_j - x_i). \quad (10)$$

Here  $\vec{s}_{ij}$  is the vector  $\vec{r}_j - \vec{r}_i$ . It is used to express relative displacements in terms of the variables  $x_i = u_i$ ,  $t_i = v_i$ ,  $z_i = w_i$ . The symbol  $r_{ij}$  is one of the  $N(N-1)/2$  additional coordinates,

$r_{ij} = [(u_j - u_i)^2 + (v_j - v_i)^2 + (w_j - w_i)^2]^{1/2}$ . We need both  $r_{ij}$  and  $\vec{s}_{ij}$  since derivatives in  $x$  space, like  $\partial/\partial x$  or  $\vec{\nabla}_{s,ij}$ , operate on functions of  $x, y, z$ , and  $\vec{s}$  but not on functions of  $r_{ij}$ . Likewise, derivatives such as  $\partial/\partial r_{ij}$  do not operate on functions of  $x$ , but do operate on functions of  $r_{ij}$ . In addition to the interparticle vector  $\vec{s}_{ij}$ , we will also have need of the position of the center of mass of pair  $ij$ , expressed in  $x, y, z$  space.

$$2 \vec{r}_{ij} = \vec{r}_j + \vec{r}_i \quad (11)$$

We can write the Hamiltonian  $H$ ,

$$H = H_0 + H' \quad (12)$$



$$H_0 = \sum_i \left[ -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \nabla_i^2 + \sum_j V_1(\vec{r}_{ij}) + \sum_{i,j} \frac{1}{2} V(\vec{r}_{ij}) - \sum_{i,j} \frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \nabla_{r,ij}^2 \right] \quad (13)$$

$$H' = - \sum_{i,j} \frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \frac{\vec{a}_{ij} \cdot \vec{\nabla}_{r,ij}}{r_{ij}} \frac{\partial}{\partial r_{ij}} \quad (14)$$

$$- \sum_{j \neq i} \frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \frac{\vec{a}_{ij} \cdot \vec{a}_{ik}}{r_{ij} r_{ik}} \frac{\partial^2}{\partial r_{ij} \partial r_{ik}}$$

$$\text{In (13), } \nabla_{r,ij}^2 = \frac{\partial^2}{\partial r_{ij}^2} + \frac{2}{r_{ij}} \frac{\partial}{\partial r_{ij}}.$$

An attempt to use the total Hamiltonian to determine a set of eigenstates of the Schrodinger equation appears uninviting. Instead, we use an approximation introduced by Fluvinae. We look upon  $H'$  as a perturbation, and look for the states of  $H_0$ :

$$H_0 \Phi = E_0^{(n)} \Phi \quad (15)$$

Here  $\Phi$  is a function of the  $3N + N(N-1)/2$  variables  $(\vec{r}_1, \vec{r}_2, \dots, \vec{r}_N; r_{12}, r_{13}, \dots, r_{23}, r_{24}, \dots, r_{34}, \dots, r_{N-1,N})$ . We attack (15) by the standard method of separation of variables; the form of  $H_0$  makes the solution separable as follows:

$$\Phi = \sum_P \left[ \prod_i \phi_i(\vec{r}_i) \eta_i(\xi_i) \right] \left[ \prod_{i>j} \chi(r_{ij}) \right] \quad (16)$$

Here we show the spin function  $\eta_i$ , a function of the spin variable  $\xi_i$ . The state function  $\Phi$  is an approximation to the true-state function. If the perturbation potential  $H'$  is truly small, the approximation will give little error in the energy level of the ground state.

$$(121) \quad \mu_1 \mu_2 \mu_3 \dots \mu_n = \mu_1 \mu_2 \mu_3 \dots \mu_n \quad \text{for } n \geq 1$$

$$\mu_1 \mu_2 \mu_3 \dots \mu_n = \mu_1 \mu_2 \mu_3 \dots \mu_n$$

(122)

$$\mu_1 \mu_2 \mu_3 \dots \mu_n = \mu_1 \mu_2 \mu_3 \dots \mu_n$$

$$\mu_1 \mu_2 \mu_3 \dots \mu_n = \mu_1 \mu_2 \mu_3 \dots \mu_n \quad (122) \text{ is}$$

The first is a statement of the fact that the sequence  $\mu_1, \mu_2, \mu_3, \dots, \mu_n$  is a sequence of real numbers. The second is a statement of the fact that the sequence  $\mu_1, \mu_2, \mu_3, \dots, \mu_n$  is a sequence of real numbers. The third is a statement of the fact that the sequence  $\mu_1, \mu_2, \mu_3, \dots, \mu_n$  is a sequence of real numbers.

(123)

$$\mu_1 \mu_2 \mu_3 \dots \mu_n$$

The first is a statement of the fact that the sequence  $\mu_1, \mu_2, \mu_3, \dots, \mu_n$  is a sequence of real numbers. The second is a statement of the fact that the sequence  $\mu_1, \mu_2, \mu_3, \dots, \mu_n$  is a sequence of real numbers. The third is a statement of the fact that the sequence  $\mu_1, \mu_2, \mu_3, \dots, \mu_n$  is a sequence of real numbers.

(124)

$$\mu_1 \mu_2 \mu_3 \dots \mu_n = \mu_1 \mu_2 \mu_3 \dots \mu_n$$

The first is a statement of the fact that the sequence  $\mu_1, \mu_2, \mu_3, \dots, \mu_n$  is a sequence of real numbers. The second is a statement of the fact that the sequence  $\mu_1, \mu_2, \mu_3, \dots, \mu_n$  is a sequence of real numbers. The third is a statement of the fact that the sequence  $\mu_1, \mu_2, \mu_3, \dots, \mu_n$  is a sequence of real numbers.



$$E = E_0 + \frac{\langle \bar{\Phi} | H' | \bar{\Phi} \rangle}{\langle \bar{\Phi} | \bar{\Phi} \rangle} \quad (17)$$

In working with the function  $\bar{\Phi}$ , we must remember the role of parameters of integration. We must, therefore, follow a program which has the following steps:

- (a) Solve (15) for  $\bar{\Phi}$
- (b) In using  $H_0$  and  $H'$ , let  $\partial/\partial x$  operate on  $x, y, z, t_x$  only, and let  $\partial/\partial r_{ij}$  operate on  $r_{ij}$  only.
- (c) After differentiation [step (b)], introduce the constraint  $r_{ij} = [(x_i - x_j)^2 + (y_i - y_j)^2 + (z_i - z_j)^2]^{1/2}$ .
- (d) After introducing the constraint, evaluate matrix elements by integration.

Note that the order of steps (b), (c), and (d) cannot be altered. As in any analysis involving a parameter, we can, however, first introduce the constraint, and then perform any remaining differentiation by ordinary rules of differentiation not involving  $\partial/\partial r_{ij}$ . We shall find that this latter program will permit the calculation of the average cohesive energy.

Pluvierge and W.B. have shown that (17) yields excellent values of  $E$  for several systems they have analyzed. Further, they have succeeded in obtaining good results by considering only  $E_0$ , after making additional assumptions concerning the function  $\bar{\Phi}$ .



$$\frac{\partial \mathcal{L}}{\partial \mathbf{U}} = \mathbf{0}$$

The above conditions are satisfied by the following choice of  $\mathbf{U}$  and  $\mathbf{V}$ . The first condition is satisfied by the choice of  $\mathbf{U}$  and  $\mathbf{V}$  given by

$$\mathbf{U} = \mathbf{I}, \quad \mathbf{V} = \mathbf{0}$$

where  $\mathbf{I}$  is the identity matrix and  $\mathbf{0}$  is the zero matrix.

The second condition is satisfied by the choice of  $\mathbf{U}$  and  $\mathbf{V}$  given by

$$\mathbf{U} = \mathbf{0}, \quad \mathbf{V} = \mathbf{I}$$

where  $\mathbf{I}$  is the identity matrix and  $\mathbf{0}$  is the zero matrix.

The third condition is satisfied by the choice of  $\mathbf{U}$  and  $\mathbf{V}$  given by

$$\mathbf{U} = \mathbf{I}, \quad \mathbf{V} = \mathbf{I}$$

where  $\mathbf{I}$  is the identity matrix and  $\mathbf{0}$  is the zero matrix.

The fourth condition is satisfied by the choice of  $\mathbf{U}$  and  $\mathbf{V}$  given by

$$\mathbf{U} = \mathbf{0}, \quad \mathbf{V} = \mathbf{0}$$

where  $\mathbf{I}$  is the identity matrix and  $\mathbf{0}$  is the zero matrix.

The fifth condition is satisfied by the choice of  $\mathbf{U}$  and  $\mathbf{V}$  given by

$$\mathbf{U} = \mathbf{I}, \quad \mathbf{V} = \mathbf{0}$$

where  $\mathbf{I}$  is the identity matrix and  $\mathbf{0}$  is the zero matrix.

The sixth condition is satisfied by the choice of  $\mathbf{U}$  and  $\mathbf{V}$  given by

$$\mathbf{U} = \mathbf{0}, \quad \mathbf{V} = \mathbf{I}$$

where  $\mathbf{I}$  is the identity matrix and  $\mathbf{0}$  is the zero matrix.

The seventh condition is satisfied by the choice of  $\mathbf{U}$  and  $\mathbf{V}$  given by

$$\mathbf{U} = \mathbf{I}, \quad \mathbf{V} = \mathbf{I}$$

### Removal of the Singular Interparticle Potential

The Hamiltonian (11) still contains the singular interparticle potential. The various applications of the Pluvinage method differ in the handling of the potential  $V(r_{ij})$ . Here, we show how to use the Pluvinage method with strongly repulsive interactions.

$H_0\Phi$  in (15) contains the following terms depending on  $r_{ij}$ :

$$\sum_P \sum_{1,j} \left[ -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \nabla_{r,1j}^2 + \frac{1}{2} V_{12}(r_{1j}) \right] \prod_{1>j} \chi(r_{1j}) \prod_k \phi_k(\vec{r}_k).$$

We can make this term vanish, and with it, the potential  $V_{12}(r_{1j})$ , by requiring<sup>16</sup>

$$\left[ -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \nabla_{r,1j}^2 + \frac{1}{2} V(r_{1j}) \right] \chi(r_{1j}) = 0. \quad (16)$$

Expression (16) can be looked upon as a mathematical artifice designed to surmount the difficulty of the singular potential. It can also be considered a Schrodinger equation defining a particular member of the continuum of states, the lowest lying of such states, that of zero energy.

In Appendix B we solve (16) by changing from variable  $r$  to variable  $q = \sigma/r$ , taking  $\chi$  as a power series in ascending positive powers

<sup>16</sup>We could write the right-hand side of (16) as  $\epsilon_{1j} \chi_{1j}(r_{1j})$ . We would find no bound states, hence  $\epsilon_{1j} \geq 0$ . For  $\epsilon_{1j} > 0$ , there would be oscillations in  $\chi$  at large distances, which would cause real trouble in describing an extensive solid. Since we hope to have the functional form of  $\chi(r_{1j})$  be independent of  $r_{1j}$ , we must eliminate oscillations at the outset by having  $\epsilon_{1j} = 0$ . We could still solve (16) with  $\epsilon_{1j} \chi_{1j}$  on the right, and then set  $\epsilon = 0$ , but this process would only serve to introduce additional terms in the series expansion for  $\chi$  which would contain  $\epsilon$  as a multiplier, a needless complication.

# THEOREM 1.1 (S. L. SOLOV'EV)

Let  $\Omega$  be a domain in  $\mathbb{R}^n$ ,  $n \geq 2$ , and let  $f \in L^p(\Omega)$ ,  $1 < p < \infty$ . Then there exists a unique function  $u \in W^{2,p}(\Omega)$  such that  $\Delta u = f$  in  $\Omega$  and  $u = 0$  on  $\partial\Omega$ .

Proof. Let  $\Omega_R$  be the domain  $\Omega \cap \{x \in \mathbb{R}^n : |x| < R\}$ .

$$\Delta u_R = f \text{ in } \Omega_R, \quad u_R = 0 \text{ on } \partial\Omega_R.$$

By the maximum principle,  $u_R \geq 0$  in  $\Omega_R$  if  $f \geq 0$  in  $\Omega$ .

$$(1.1) \quad u_R \leq u_{R+1} \text{ in } \Omega_R.$$

By (1.1),  $\{u_R\}$  is a monotone increasing sequence. Let  $u = \lim_{R \rightarrow \infty} u_R$ . Then  $u \in W^{2,p}(\Omega)$  and  $\Delta u = f$  in  $\Omega$ . Moreover,  $u = 0$  on  $\partial\Omega$ . The uniqueness follows from the maximum principle.

Corollary 1.2. Let  $\Omega$  be a domain in  $\mathbb{R}^n$ ,  $n \geq 2$ , and let  $f \in L^p(\Omega)$ ,  $1 < p < \infty$ . Then there exists a unique function  $u \in W^{2,p}(\Omega)$  such that  $\Delta u = f$  in  $\Omega$  and  $u = 0$  on  $\partial\Omega$ . Moreover,  $u \in L^p(\Omega)$  if and only if  $f \in L^p(\Omega)$ .

of  $q$ . The result, for the physical parameters of  $\text{He}^3$ , is a rapidly converging series. The two linearly independent solutions are

$$\chi_0 = C_0 F_0(\sigma/r)$$

$$\chi_1 = C_1(\sigma/r) F_1(\sigma/r)$$

$$F_0(x) = 1 - \frac{B}{4 \cdot 3} x^4 + \frac{B^2}{(8 \cdot 7 \cdot 4 \cdot 3)} x^8 + \frac{B^3}{(10 \cdot 9)} x^{10} \\ - \frac{B^3}{(11 \cdot 12 \cdot 8 \cdot 7 \cdot 4 \cdot 3)} x^{12} + \dots$$

$$F_1(x) = 1 - \frac{B}{(4 \cdot 5)} x^4 + \frac{B^2}{(9 \cdot 8 \cdot 5 \cdot 4)} x^8 + \frac{B^3}{(11 \cdot 10)} x^{10} + \dots$$

Here  $B = m \sigma^2 e K \hbar / h^2$ , which has the value 16.60 for  $\text{He}^3$ .

At large  $r$ ,  $\chi_0 \rightarrow C_0$ , and when  $r \rightarrow \sigma$  from above,  $\chi_0$  tends rapidly to zero. This behavior is characteristic of a hard core interaction. At large  $r$ ,  $\chi_1 = 0$ ; it then reaches a maximum at an intermediate value of  $r$ , and has a finite value at  $r = \sigma$ . In Appendix B,  $\chi_1$  is shown to yield a solution with an outgoing flux at large distances. This is an unsatisfactory characteristic which cannot be permitted in  $\Phi_0$ . We thus choose  $C_1 = 0$ .

We now demonstrate that  $C_0 = 1$ . Since the Hamiltonian does not contain the time, we may choose  $\chi$  to be real. Since  $F$  is real,  $C_0$  must be real.

$$C_0 = C_0^*.$$

At large distances of separation the interaction has no effect on the two-particle wave function. Therefore, the probability density for



Let  $\alpha$  be a root of the equation  $x^2 + x + 1 = 0$ . Then  $\alpha^3 = 1$  and  $\alpha \neq 1$ . Hence  $\alpha$  is a primitive 3rd root of unity. Let  $\beta = \alpha^2$ . Then  $\beta^3 = 1$  and  $\beta \neq 1$ . Hence  $\beta$  is also a primitive 3rd root of unity. Note that  $\alpha + \beta = -1$  and  $\alpha\beta = 1$ .

$$\alpha^2 + \alpha + 1 = 0$$

$$\alpha^2 + \alpha + 1 = 0$$

$$\alpha^2 + \alpha + 1 = 0 \implies \alpha^2 = -\alpha - 1$$

$$\alpha^3 = 1 \implies \alpha^3 - 1 = 0 \implies (\alpha - 1)(\alpha^2 + \alpha + 1) = 0$$

$$\alpha^3 = 1 \implies \alpha^3 - 1 = 0 \implies (\alpha - 1)(\alpha^2 + \alpha + 1) = 0$$

Let  $\alpha$  be a root of the equation  $x^2 + x + 1 = 0$ . Then  $\alpha^3 = 1$  and  $\alpha \neq 1$ . Hence  $\alpha$  is a primitive 3rd root of unity. Let  $\beta = \alpha^2$ . Then  $\beta^3 = 1$  and  $\beta \neq 1$ . Hence  $\beta$  is also a primitive 3rd root of unity. Note that  $\alpha + \beta = -1$  and  $\alpha\beta = 1$ . The field  $\mathbb{Q}(\alpha)$  is a subfield of  $\mathbb{C}$  and contains  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$ . Since  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  are roots of the same polynomial, they are conjugates over  $\mathbb{Q}$ . The field  $\mathbb{Q}(\alpha)$  is a Galois extension of  $\mathbb{Q}$  and its Galois group is isomorphic to  $\mathbb{Z}/3\mathbb{Z}$ . The automorphism  $\sigma$  defined by  $\sigma(\alpha) = \beta$  and  $\sigma(\beta) = \alpha$  is a generator of the Galois group. The fixed field of  $\sigma$  is  $\mathbb{Q}$ . The field  $\mathbb{Q}(\alpha)$  is a cyclic extension of  $\mathbb{Q}$  of degree 3.

Let  $\alpha$  be a root of the equation  $x^2 + x + 1 = 0$ . Then  $\alpha^3 = 1$  and  $\alpha \neq 1$ . Hence  $\alpha$  is a primitive 3rd root of unity. Let  $\beta = \alpha^2$ . Then  $\beta^3 = 1$  and  $\beta \neq 1$ . Hence  $\beta$  is also a primitive 3rd root of unity. Note that  $\alpha + \beta = -1$  and  $\alpha\beta = 1$ .

$$\alpha^2 + \alpha + 1 = 0$$

Let  $\alpha$  be a root of the equation  $x^2 + x + 1 = 0$ . Then  $\alpha^3 = 1$  and  $\alpha \neq 1$ . Hence  $\alpha$  is a primitive 3rd root of unity. Let  $\beta = \alpha^2$ . Then  $\beta^3 = 1$  and  $\beta \neq 1$ . Hence  $\beta$  is also a primitive 3rd root of unity. Note that  $\alpha + \beta = -1$  and  $\alpha\beta = 1$ .



particles  $i$  and  $j$  is independent of  $r_{ij}$ , and multiplying the wave function by the square of the correlation amplitude leaves the wave function unchanged. That is,

$$\chi_{ij}^*(r_{ij} \rightarrow \infty) \chi_{ij}(r_{ij} \rightarrow \infty) = 1.$$

Therefore,  $C_0^2 F_0^2(0) = 1$ , or  $C_0^2 = 1$ . We take the positive root of  $C_0^2$ .

If we were to use the WKB approximation to obtain the wave function for  $r < \sigma$ , we would find that  $\chi$  would continue to fall off rapidly as

$$\exp \left( - \int_{r=\sigma}^{r=r_1} [V(\sigma - r)2m]^{1/2} h^{-1} dr \right) \propto [V(\sigma - r)2m]^{-1/2}.$$

Hence we are justified in assuming that  $\chi(r)$  is vanishingly small inside  $r = \sigma$  (provided only that we use caution in calculating derivatives for  $r \approx \sigma$ ). Our representation for  $\chi$ , the series  $F_0(\sigma/r)$ , has poor convergence properties for  $r < \sigma$ . Because of the smallness of  $\chi(r)$  for  $r < \sigma$ , we can cut off  $F_0(\sigma/r)$  by writing

$$\chi(r_{ij}) = F_0(E, r_{ij}) \theta(r_{ij} - r_0) \quad (19)$$

Here  $r_0 \lesssim \sigma$  where  $r_0$  cannot be much less than  $\sigma$ , and  $\theta(x)$  is the step function  $\theta(x) = 1$ ,  $x > 0$ ;  $\theta(x) = 0$ ,  $x < 0$ .

In Fig. 2,  $\chi(r_{ij})$ ,  $\chi^2(r_{ij})$ , and  $\chi(r_{ij})\chi'(r_{ij})/r_{ij}$  are plotted for  $\text{He}^3$ . In Fig. 3 we illustrate the comparison between the series function  $F_0^2$  and two approximate analytical representations. The function

Let  $f$  be a function defined on the interval  $[a, b]$ . The function  $f$  is said to be continuous at a point  $c$  in the interval  $[a, b]$  if the limit of  $f(x)$  as  $x$  approaches  $c$  is equal to  $f(c)$ .

$$\lim_{x \rightarrow c} f(x) = f(c)$$

The function  $f$  is said to be continuous on the interval  $[a, b]$  if it is continuous at every point  $c$  in the interval  $[a, b]$ .

The function  $f$  is said to be continuous on the interval  $[a, b]$  if it is continuous at every point  $c$  in the interval  $[a, b]$ .

$$\lim_{x \rightarrow c} f(x) = f(c) \iff \left( \forall \epsilon > 0, \exists \delta > 0, \text{ such that } |f(x) - f(c)| < \epsilon \text{ whenever } |x - c| < \delta \right)$$

Let  $f$  be a function defined on the interval  $[a, b]$ . The function  $f$  is said to be continuous at a point  $c$  in the interval  $[a, b]$  if the limit of  $f(x)$  as  $x$  approaches  $c$  is equal to  $f(c)$ .

$$\lim_{x \rightarrow c} f(x) = f(c)$$

The function  $f$  is said to be continuous on the interval  $[a, b]$  if it is continuous at every point  $c$  in the interval  $[a, b]$ .

The function  $f$  is said to be continuous on the interval  $[a, b]$  if it is continuous at every point  $c$  in the interval  $[a, b]$ .

$1 - \frac{r_0}{r} e^{-\gamma(r-r_0)}$  shown in both Figs. 2 and 3 is an extremely close fit.  
 This is the trial function which has been found to give the lowest energy,  
 out of many tried in the Jastrow method.<sup>6</sup>



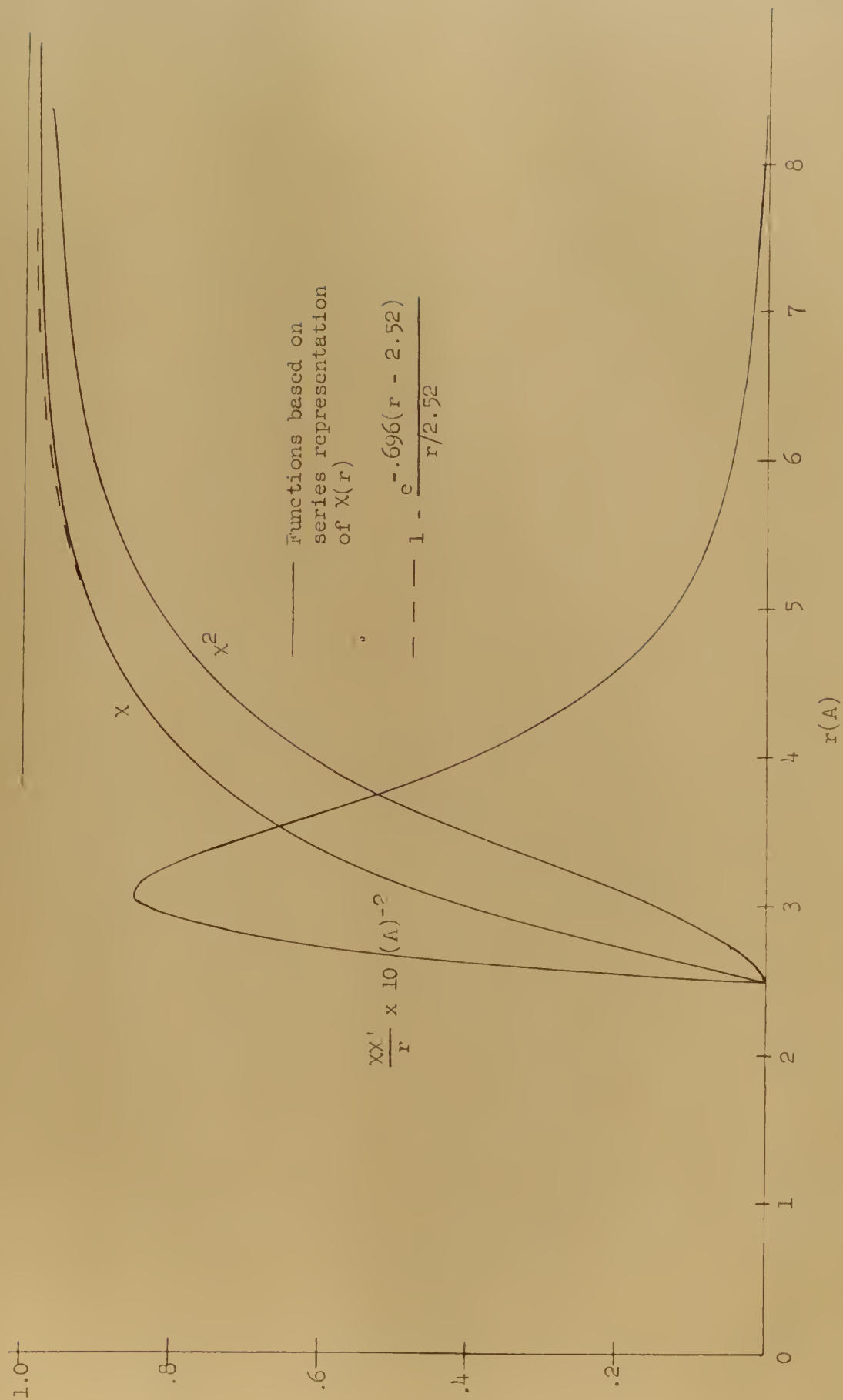


Figure 2. Correlation Amplitude





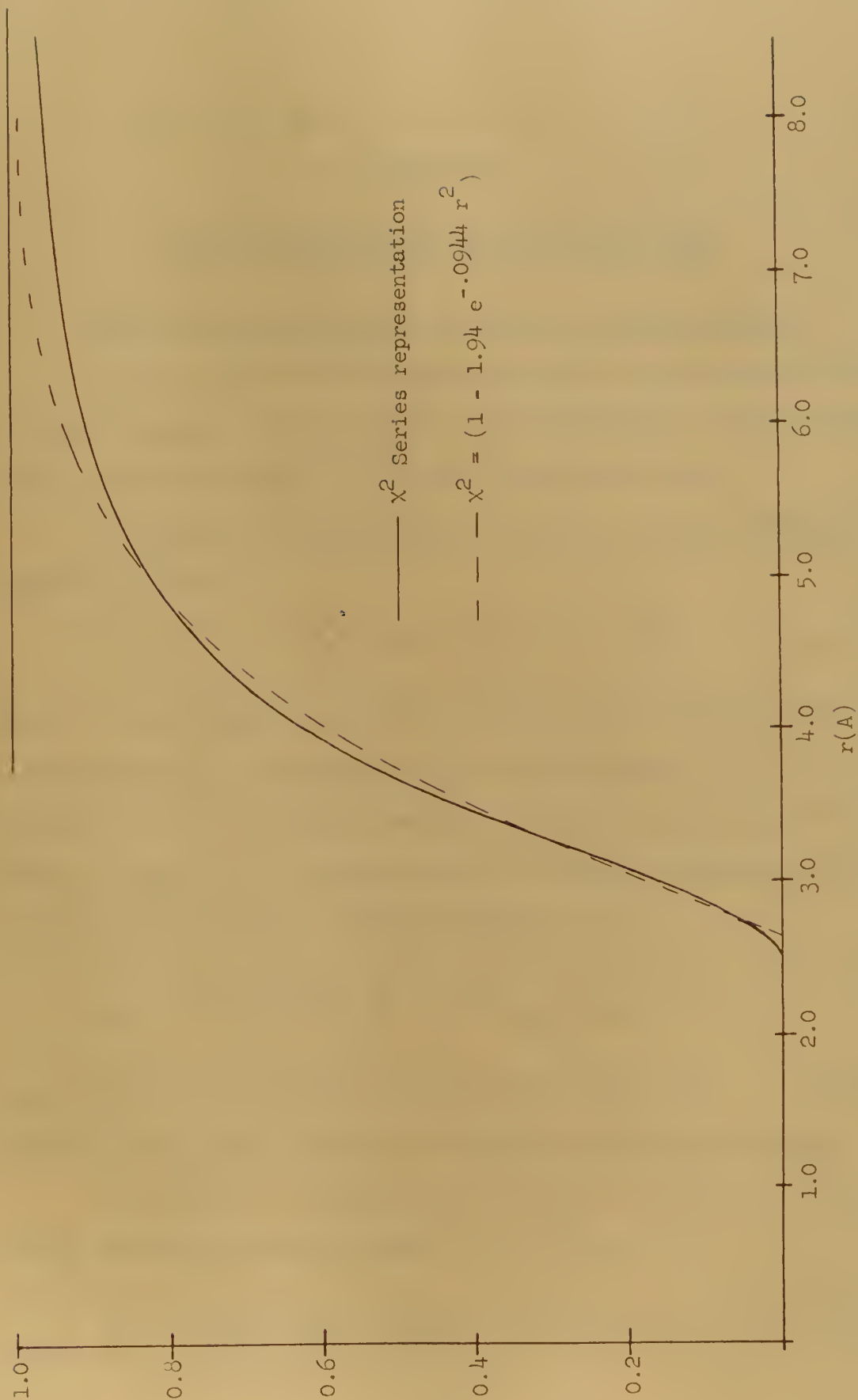


Figure 3. Correlation Probability Density



## CHAPTER IV

### THE MANY-BODY PROBLEM IN SOLID HELIUM THREE

#### Density Matrix Formulation of the Many-Body Wave Function

In this chapter we shall develop a theory of the many-body problem which can be applied to dense solids. The development uses the density matrix formalism of Löwdin,<sup>1</sup> which we review briefly here.

We consider the many-body wave function  $\psi$  which fulfills the symmetry condition.

$$P \psi(\vec{x}_1, \vec{x}_2 \dots \vec{x}_N) = (\eta)^p \psi(\vec{x}_1, \vec{x}_2 \dots \vec{x}_N) \quad (1)$$

where  $P$  is a permutation operator working on the subscripts of the coordinates, and  $p$  is its parity. For Bose particles,  $\eta = 1$ . For Fermi particles,  $\eta = -1$ . The spin variable, if any, is included in  $\vec{x}$ . A physical quantity  $\Omega$  associated with the system is represented by a Hermitian operator  $\Omega_{op}$ . It may be expressed as:

$$\Omega_{op} = \Omega_0 + \sum_i \Omega_i + \frac{1}{2!} \sum_{ij} \Omega_{ij} + \frac{1}{3!} \sum_{ijk} \Omega_{ijk} + \dots, \quad (2)$$

where we separate the operator into its zero-, one-, two-, . . . particle operators. The prime omits terms having two or more equal indices.

To evaluate the average value of  $\Omega_{op}$ , we introduce a series of density matrices of various orders:

---

<sup>1</sup>P. O. Löwdin, Phys. Rev. 97, 1474 (1955); Phys. Rev. 97, 1490 (1955); Phys. Rev. 97, 1509 (1955).





$$r(\vec{x}_1 | \vec{x}_1) = N \psi^*(1'23 \dots N) \psi(123 \dots N) \overline{dx_1}. \quad (3)$$

The symbol  $\overline{dx_1}$  signifies integration over all variables except  $x_1$ .

$$r(\vec{x}_1' \vec{x}_2' | \vec{x}_1 \vec{x}_2) = \frac{N(N-1)}{2} \int \psi^*(1'2'3 \dots N) \psi(123 \dots N) \overline{dx_1' dx_2'}$$

$$r^{(p)}(\vec{x}_1' \vec{x}_2' \dots \vec{x}_p' | \vec{x}_1 \vec{x}_2 \dots \vec{x}_p) =$$

$$\frac{N!}{p!(N-p)!} \int \psi^*(1'2' \dots p' \dots N) \psi(12 \dots p \dots N) \overline{dx_1' \dots dx_p'} \quad (4)$$

$$r^{(N)}(\vec{x}_1' \vec{x}_2' \dots \vec{x}_N' | \vec{x}_1 \vec{x}_2 \dots \vec{x}_N) = \psi^*(1'2'3' \dots N') \psi(123 \dots N).$$

The matrices (4) fulfill the following conditions:

$$r(\vec{x}_1 \vec{x}_2 | \vec{x}_1' \vec{x}_2') = r^*(\vec{x}_1' \vec{x}_2' | \vec{x}_1 \vec{x}_2)$$

and

$$r(\vec{x}_2' \vec{x}_1' | \vec{x}_1 \vec{x}_2) = \eta r(\vec{x}_1' \vec{x}_2' | \vec{x}_1 \vec{x}_2).$$

$$\text{But } r(\vec{x}_2' \vec{x}_1' | \vec{x}_2 \vec{x}_1) = r(\vec{x}_1' \vec{x}_2' | \vec{x}_1 \vec{x}_2), \text{ regardless of } \eta. \quad (5)$$

We also have

$$\begin{aligned} & r^{(p-1)}(\vec{x}_1' \vec{x}_2' \dots \vec{x}_{p-1}' | \vec{x}_1 \vec{x}_2 \dots \vec{x}_{p-1}) \\ &= \frac{p}{N+1-p} \int r^{(p)}(\vec{x}_1' \vec{x}_2' \dots \vec{x}_{p-1}' \vec{x}_p' | \vec{x}_1 \vec{x}_2 \dots \vec{x}_{p-1} \vec{x}_p) \overline{dx_p}. \end{aligned} \quad (6)$$

The diagonal elements are of special importance

$$r(\vec{x}_1) = r(\vec{x}_1 | \vec{x}_1)$$

$$r(\vec{x}_1, \vec{x}_2) = r(\vec{x}_1 \vec{x}_2 | \vec{x}_1 \vec{x}_2). \quad (7)$$



These matrices are symmetric for  $\eta = \pm 1$ . We can interpret  $r(\vec{x}_1)dv_1$  as  $N$  times the probability of finding a particle in  $dv_1$  at  $\vec{r}_1$ , with spin  $\xi_1$ , regardless of the positions and spins of all the other particles. Similarly,  $r(\vec{x}_1, \vec{x}_2)dv_1 dv_2$  is the number of pairs,  $N(N-1)/2$ , times the probability of finding one particle in  $dv_1$  at  $\vec{r}_1$  with spin  $\xi_1$  and another in  $dv_2$  at  $\vec{r}_2$  with spin  $\xi_2$ , regardless of the spins and positions of all other particles. According to (3), we have

$$\begin{aligned} \int r(1) d\vec{x}_1 &= N; \quad \int r(1, 2) d\vec{x}_1 d\vec{x}_2 = N(N-1)/2 \\ \int r^{(p)}(\vec{x}_1, \vec{x}_2, \dots, \vec{x}_p) d\vec{x}_1 d\vec{x}_2 \dots d\vec{x}_p &= \frac{N}{p!(N-p)!} \end{aligned} \quad (8)$$

The matrix  $r^{(p)}$  is antisymmetric in each set of indices when  $\eta = -1$ . Therefore, if two or more indices are equal,  $r^{(p)} = 0$ . In particular

$$r(\vec{x}_1, \vec{x}_1) = 0, \quad r^{(3)}(\vec{x}_1, \vec{x}_2, \vec{x}_2) = 0. \quad (9)$$

These relationships are expressions of the Pauli principle.

We now consider the use of operators to obtain average values of physical quantities. Using a two-particle operator as an example,

$$\langle \Omega \rangle = \int \psi^* \left( \sum_{ij} \Omega_{ij} \right) \psi d\vec{x}_1 \dots d\vec{x}_N.$$

Evaluating the integral for the general pair  $12$ , we have

$$\begin{aligned} \langle \Omega \rangle &= \frac{1}{2} N(N-1) \int \psi^* \Omega_{12} \psi d\vec{x}_1 \dots d\vec{x}_N \\ &= \binom{N}{2} \int \{ \psi^*(1'2'3 \dots N) \Omega_{12} \psi(123 \dots N) \}_{\vec{x}_1'=\vec{x}_1; \vec{x}_2'=\vec{x}_2} \\ &\quad d\vec{x}_1 \dots d\vec{x}_N. \end{aligned}$$

...  
...  
...  
...  
...  
...  
...  
...

$$171 - 172 = 171 - 172 = 171 - 172$$

$$(1) \quad 171 - 172 = 171 - 172 = 171 - 172$$

...  
...  
...  
...

$$(2) \quad 171 - 172 = 171 - 172 = 171 - 172$$

...  
...  
...  
...

$$171 - 172 = 171 - 172 = 171 - 172$$

...

$$171 - 172 = 171 - 172 = 171 - 172$$

$$(3) \quad 171 - 172 = 171 - 172 = 171 - 172$$

$$171 - 172 = 171 - 172 = 171 - 172$$



Applying (3), we get

$$\langle \Omega \rangle = \int (\Omega_{12} \Gamma(\vec{x}_1' \vec{x}_2' | \vec{x}_1 \vec{x}_2))_{\vec{x}_1'=\vec{x}_1; \vec{x}_2'=\vec{x}_2} d\vec{x}_1 d\vec{x}_2 \quad (10)$$

We use the convention that  $\Omega_{ij}$  operates only on the unprimed coordinates  $\vec{x}_i$  and  $\vec{x}_j$ , and not on  $\vec{x}_i'$ ,  $\vec{x}_j'$ . Hence the non-diagonal elements are needed to express the expectation values of differential operators. Using the convention of (10), we get, for the general operator (2),

$$\begin{aligned} \langle \Omega_{op} \rangle &= \int \psi^* \Omega_{op} \psi d\vec{x}_1 \dots d\vec{x}_N \\ &= \Omega_0 + \int \Omega_1 \Gamma(\vec{x}_1' | \vec{x}_1) d\vec{x}_1 + \int \Omega_{12} \Gamma(\vec{x}_1' \vec{x}_2' | \vec{x}_1 \vec{x}_2) d\vec{x}_1 d\vec{x}_2 \\ &\quad + \int \Omega_{123} \Gamma(\vec{x}_1' \vec{x}_2' \vec{x}_3' | \vec{x}_1 \vec{x}_2 \vec{x}_3) d\vec{x}_1 d\vec{x}_2 d\vec{x}_3 + \dots, \end{aligned} \quad (11)$$

In our problem, we have the two-particle operator  $V_{ij}(|\vec{x}_i - \vec{x}_j|)$ , and do not introduce three-particle operators. Hence, a description of the solid in terms of density matrices of order 2 should give accurate values of  $\langle \Omega_{op} \rangle$ , as follows:

$$\langle \Omega_{op} \rangle = \frac{\int (\Omega_0 + N \Omega_1 + \binom{N}{2} \Omega_{12}) \Gamma(\vec{x}_1' \vec{x}_2' | \vec{x}_1 \vec{x}_2) d\vec{x}_1 d\vec{x}_2}{\int \Gamma(\vec{x}_1, \vec{x}_2) d\vec{x}_1 d\vec{x}_2} \quad (12)$$

In (12), we take care of normalization by the denominator, which is constructed to give unity for  $\Omega_{op} = 1$ .

### Single-Particle Density

(a) In this section, we use the formalism of the density matrices introduced in the preceding section to build up an  $N$  particle description of the solid. This description will be approximate, in that it will



$$(10) \quad \dots \dots \dots$$

... ..

$$\dots \dots \dots$$

$$\dots \dots \dots$$

$$(11) \quad \dots \dots \dots$$

... ..

$$(12) \quad \dots \dots \dots$$

... ..

### ... ..

... ..

describe the properties of the solid in the single-particle sense, just as the Slater determinant describes weakly interacting systems. Our description takes the correlations explicitly into account, an additional refinement not included in the Slater description.

(b) Single-Particle Probability Density. We shall write down the  $N$ -body density matrix in terms of the full Flavinage wave function, and reduce it to a single-particle density matrix. We then show, for dense systems, that a simple representation can be used as the solution to an integral equation, yielding an explicit form for the single-particle density matrix, which includes correlation effects.

The  $N$ -body density matrix is

$$\Gamma^{(N)} = \left| \sum_P \prod_i \phi_i(\vec{X}_i) \prod_{j > k} \chi(r_{jk}) \right|^2 \quad (13)$$

In (13), we show the diagonal form and do not introduce prime coordinates. The result is sufficiently general for our needs, since we do not seek expectation values of differential operators, but merely the probability density. Non-diagonal complications will concern us in later sections.

When we use (13), we must remember the set of constraints  $r_{ij} = +\sqrt{\vec{s}_{ij} \cdot \vec{s}_{ij}}$ . It is not necessary to specify the form of  $\chi$  until we attempt to make numerical calculations. We shall assume, however, that  $\chi$  is a universal function of the distance between any two particles, independent of the spin of the particles.

From Eq. (3) the single-particle density matrix  $\gamma(\vec{X}_1)$  can be obtained by integrating the  $N$ -particle matrix over all coordinates except  $\vec{X}_1$ .



$$r(\vec{x}_1) = (\text{const}) \int r^{(N)}(\vec{x}_1 \dots \vec{x}_1 \dots \vec{x}_N) \overline{d\vec{x}_1} \quad (14)$$

The constant is a normalizing constant depending only on the number of particles. In the first section of this chapter, we evaluated it as  $N$  itself.

We can rewrite (14) in terms of the representation (13):

$$r(1) = (\text{const}) \sum_P P_S \phi_1^*(1) \phi_1(1) \int \phi_2^*(2) \phi_2(2) \dots \phi_N^*(N) \phi_N(N) \\ \times_{23}^2(r_{23}) \times_{24}^2(r_{24}) \dots \times_{12}^2 \overline{d\vec{x}_2} \times_{13}^2 \overline{d\vec{x}_3} \times_{14}^2 \overline{d\vec{x}_4} \dots \quad (15)$$

In (15), we have explicitly shown the diagonal form of the density matrix. The permutations refer to interchanging the coordinates of the  $\phi_1$  for both  $\phi_1^*$  and  $\phi_1$  simultaneously. The resulting function is symmetric in the interchange of any two particles. The symbol  $P_S$  (S for symmetric) shows this symmetry. The last relationship in (5) shows this property.

An assumption is implied in writing (15) in this way in that we are neglecting the spins of the particles. We have assumed that if

$$r^{(2)}(1'2'|12) = \begin{vmatrix} \phi_a^*(1') & \phi_a^*(2') \\ \phi_b^*(1') & \phi_b^*(2') \end{vmatrix} \times \begin{vmatrix} \phi_a(1) & \phi_b(1) \\ \phi_a(2) & \phi_b(2) \end{vmatrix},$$

then

$$r^{(2)}(12|12) = |\phi_a(1)|^2 |\phi_b(2)|^2 + |\phi_a(2)|^2 |\phi_b(1)|^2. \quad (16)$$

By so doing, we have dropped from  $r^{(2)}(12|12)$  an overlap term -  $[(\phi_a^*(1) \phi_a(2) \phi_b^*(2) \phi_b(1)) + (\text{complex conjugate})]$ . This term contributes positive or negative amounts to  $r^{(2)}$ , depending on the relative spin







functions of  $\phi_a$  and  $\phi_b$ . We shall find that (a) correlations keep our particles well separated, and (b) the  $\phi$ 's are orthogonal for particles well separated, so that contributions of overlap are very small compared to terms like  $|\phi_1(1)|^2$ . Hence we are justified in dropping the overlap term when it appears in (15). We will find that we cannot drop this term when we consider exchange effects.

We shall assume throughout that the symmetric permutation of diagonal elements shown in (16) is adequate to describe probability density effects. We shall find later that exchange effects are negligible, thus justifying the assumption.

Writing (15) in modified form, we have

$$r(1) = (\text{const}) \sum_j \phi_j^2(1) \int \left\{ \sum_P P_S \phi_2^2(2) \dots \phi_1^2(j) \dots \phi_N^2(N) \right. \\ \left. x_{23}^2 \dots x_{N-1N}^2 \right\} \prod_{k \neq 1} x_{1k} d\vec{x}_k.$$

The term in curly brackets is  $\Gamma^{(N-1)}(j, 2, \dots, j-1, j+1, \dots, N)$ . Because the diagonal form of  $\Gamma$  is symmetric on interchange of its coordinates, the ordering of the labels is immaterial in the  $\phi$ 's as well as the  $x$ 's. Hence, in each member of the sum over  $j$ , the multiple integrals are identical in form, independent of the position of the index  $j$ . We can, therefore, factor out the integral in each sum over  $j$ :

$$r(1) = (\text{const}) \left( \sum_j \phi_j^2(1) \right) \int \Gamma^{(N-1)}(j, 2, \dots, N) \prod_{k \neq 1} x_{1k} d\vec{x}_k. \quad (17)$$

We must now consider the central assumption of this development. We assume that we can project out a single-particle description from the



many-particle description (13), or that there exists a  $\gamma(1)$  which describes the average behavior of the solid by assigning certain properties to a single average particle labeled (1). The refinement that we build into  $\gamma(1)$  should include the effect of correlations between the particle with coordinate  $r_1$  and the average position of all the other particles, but will not include correlations within other pairs. (These other pairs would enter into a two-body density matrix description  $\Gamma(1, 2)$ , which describes (a), correlations of 1 and 2 with the average positions of all the other particles, and (b), the actual correlation between 1 and 2.)

The  $\chi_{1k}^2(r_{1k})$  in (17) carry the correlation effect between atom 1 and the other atoms  $k$ , but we need to know the average positions of the other atoms. For this purpose, expressing  $\Gamma^{(N-1)}$  as a product of single-particle density matrices is adequate.

Therefore, if we set

$$\Gamma^{(N)}(1, 2, 3 \dots N) = \frac{1}{N!} \prod_{j=1}^N \gamma(j),$$

we have an expression which satisfies the relations (3), (4) and (5) applying to density matrices, and specifies the positions of the particles adequately for the purpose of evaluating the integral in (17).

We can now write for (17)

$$\begin{aligned} \gamma(1) &= \text{const} \sum_j \phi_j^2(1) \int \prod_{t \neq 1} \gamma(t) \prod_{k \neq 1} \chi_{1k}^2(r_{1k}) d\vec{r}_k \\ &= \text{const} \left[ \sum_j \phi_j^2(1) \right] \prod_{k \neq 1} \int \gamma(k) \chi_{1k}^2 d\vec{r}_k \end{aligned} \quad (18)$$





Equation (13) is an integral equation in  $\gamma(j)$  which gives the projection of a single-particle state from the many-body state. To obtain it, we have assumed:

(1) The two-particle separation of the wave function, (13), is an adequate description of the  $N$  body system;

(2) Among the single-particle states, overlap has a negligible effect on single-particle properties, in that integrals of the type

$\int \phi_j(1) \phi_k(1) dv_1, k \neq j$  all vanish;

(3)  $\chi_{ij}(r_{ij})$  is a universal function of the distance  $r_{ij}$ , regardless of the identity of  $i$  and  $j$ .

We have not assumed boundary conditions for the  $\phi$ 's, nor a specific functional form for  $\chi_{ij}(r_{ij})$ .

In the next section, we shall use (13) to obtain an explicit single-particle representation for solid  $\text{He}^3$ .

#### A Solution of the Density Equation for Dense Solids

It seems obvious that  $\gamma(\vec{r}_j)$  in (14) is a function which has a maximum in its spatial dependence at lattice points and shows the translational symmetry of the lattice. In fact, we can define a solid by requiring that it be described by a  $\gamma(\vec{r}_j)$  with these properties. We make the additional assumptions that to a good order of approximation  $\gamma(\vec{r}_j)$  has spherical symmetry in its behavior in the immediate neighborhood of lattice points (this consideration is independent of the fact that the maxima of the  $\gamma(\vec{r}_j)$  are disposed according to lattice symmetry), that  $\gamma(\vec{r}_j)$  decreases monotonically away from lattice sites, and that it is continuous with continuous derivatives everywhere. A simple function with these properties is



the first part of the paper, we consider the case of a single

equation of the form

where  $\mathcal{L}$  is a linear operator and  $f$  is a function.

In the second part, we consider the case of a system of

equations of the form

where  $\mathcal{L}$  is a linear operator and  $f$  is a function.

In the third part, we consider the case of a system of

equations of the form

where  $\mathcal{L}$  is a linear operator and  $f$  is a function.

In the fourth part, we consider the case of a system of

equations of the form

where  $\mathcal{L}$  is a linear operator and  $f$  is a function.

In the fifth part, we consider the case of a system of

equations of the form

### REFERENCES

[1] J. L. Ericksen, *On the theory of liquid crystals*, Arch. Rational Mech. Anal. 5 (1966), 117-139.

[2] E. H. Lieb, *On the existence of solutions of the Dirac equation*, J. Functional Analysis 15 (1974), 207-231.

[3] L. D. Landau and E. M. Lifshitz, *Electrodynamics of continuous media*, Pergamon Press, Oxford, 1960.

[4] P. L. Lions, *On the existence of solutions of the Dirac equation*, J. Functional Analysis 15 (1974), 207-231.

[5] J. L. Ericksen, *On the theory of liquid crystals*, Arch. Rational Mech. Anal. 5 (1966), 117-139.

[6] E. H. Lieb, *On the existence of solutions of the Dirac equation*, J. Functional Analysis 15 (1974), 207-231.

[7] L. D. Landau and E. M. Lifshitz, *Electrodynamics of continuous media*, Pergamon Press, Oxford, 1960.

[8] P. L. Lions, *On the existence of solutions of the Dirac equation*, J. Functional Analysis 15 (1974), 207-231.

[9] J. L. Ericksen, *On the theory of liquid crystals*, Arch. Rational Mech. Anal. 5 (1966), 117-139.

[10] E. H. Lieb, *On the existence of solutions of the Dirac equation*, J. Functional Analysis 15 (1974), 207-231.

$$\sum_j e^{-\delta^2(\vec{R}_j - \vec{r}_1)^2}.$$

Here  $\vec{R}_j$  is the position of the lattice site  $j$ , and  $\vec{r}_1$  is the position of particle 1.

We can define a quantity  $r_j(\vec{r}_1)$ , which is a component of  $r(\vec{r}_1)$

$$r_j(\vec{r}_1) = e^{-\delta^2(\vec{R}_j - \vec{r}_1)^2} \left( \sqrt{\frac{\pi}{\delta^2}} \right)^3$$

$$r(\vec{r}_1) = \sum_j r_j(\vec{r}_1) \quad (19)$$

We must remember that  $r(\vec{r}_1)$  has meaning only near lattice sites, which means that large values of  $\delta^2(\vec{R}_j - \vec{r}_1)$  give  $r_j(\vec{r}_1) = 0$ . Hence, (19) presents no complication from overlap, since we have  $\delta^2 \gg \frac{1}{a^2}$ , and the only term of  $r$  that contributes near  $\vec{R}_k$  is  $r_k$ .

We redefine terms in (18):

$$r_1(1) = \sum_i |\phi_i(1)|^2 \prod_{j \neq 1} r_j(u_{1j}). \quad (20)$$

The subscript 1 appears on  $r_1(1)$  since (20) only describes the density near  $\vec{R}_1$ . In (20),  $u_{1j}$  is the distance  $|\vec{R}_j - \vec{r}_1|$  from the field point  $\vec{r}_1$  to the lattice site  $j$ , and

$$r_j(u_{kj}) = \int r(\vec{r}_j) [\chi_{kj}^2(r_{kj})] d\vec{r}_j. \quad (21)$$

Putting the assumed solution (19) into (21), we have

$$r_j(u_{kj}) = (\text{const}) \int \sum_t e^{-\delta^2(\vec{R}_t - \vec{r}_j)^2} \chi_{kj}^2(r_{kj}) d\vec{r}_j.$$

$$f(\frac{1}{2}) = \frac{1}{2}$$

Let  $f$  be a function on  $[0, 1]$  such that  $f(0) = 0$  and  $f(1) = 1$ .

Suppose that  $f$  is continuous on  $[0, 1]$  and differentiable on  $(0, 1)$ .

Prove that there exists a point  $c \in (0, 1)$  such that  $f'(c) = 1$ .

$$\left( \frac{1}{2} \right)^n = \frac{1}{2^n}$$

$$(1) \quad f(x) = \frac{1}{x}$$

Let  $f$  be a function on  $(0, \infty)$  such that  $f(x) = \frac{1}{x}$  for all  $x > 0$ .

Prove that  $f$  is not differentiable at  $x = 0$ .

Hint: Use the definition of the derivative.

Let  $f$  be a function on  $(0, \infty)$  such that  $f(x) = \frac{1}{x}$  for all  $x > 0$ .

Prove that  $f$  is not differentiable at  $x = 0$ .

$$(2) \quad f(x) = \frac{1}{x^2}$$

Let  $f$  be a function on  $(0, \infty)$  such that  $f(x) = \frac{1}{x^2}$  for all  $x > 0$ .

Prove that  $f$  is differentiable at  $x = 0$ .

Hint: Use the definition of the derivative.

$$(3) \quad f(x) = \frac{1}{x^3}$$

Let  $f$  be a function on  $(0, \infty)$  such that  $f(x) = \frac{1}{x^3}$  for all  $x > 0$ .

$$f'(x) = -\frac{3}{x^4}$$

Noting that with  $\delta^2 \gg \frac{1}{2}$ , all the elements of the sum over  $t$  are very small except for  $t = j$ , we get

$$r_j(u_{kj}) = (\text{const}) \int e^{-\delta^2 q_j^2} \chi^2(\vec{r}_{kj}) d\vec{r}_j, \quad (22)$$

where  $\vec{q}_j = \vec{R}_j - \vec{r}_j$ , a coordinate with origin at the lattice site  $j$ .

When we write (22) in its diagonal form, where we consider only  $r_j(j)$ , we also obtain only the part of  $\gamma(1)$  which describes its probability density around  $\vec{R}_1$  and we must obtain the rest of  $\gamma(1)$  merely by adding other terms with  $e^{-\delta^2(\vec{R}_k - \vec{r}_1)^2}$ ,  $k \neq 1$ .

Formula (C-3) of Appendix C tells us that (22) is

$$r_j(u_{kj}) = \chi^2(u_{kj}) + O\left(\frac{\chi \chi'}{\delta^2 u}, \frac{\chi^2}{\delta u} e^{-\delta^2(u - r_0)^2}\right) \quad (23)$$

In Appendix C we show that any function  $\chi^2$  in the integral (22), which is slowly varying near  $\vec{r}_{kj} = \vec{u}_{kj}$  compared to  $e^{-\delta^2 q_j^2}$  near  $q = 0$ , will give a result in the form (23). With (23) we can form the product of correlation functions in (20). The result of the product is displayed in formulas (30) and (31), which we now proceed to derive.

Since  $r_j$  is well behaved for  $u > 2.5 \text{ \AA}$ , we can expand  $r_j(u_{kj})$  about the value  $u_{kj} = R_\lambda$ . (Inter,  $R_\lambda$  is to be a distance to a shell of atoms equidistant from an arbitrary lattice point as origin.) The expansion is

$$r_j(u_{kj}) = f(R_\lambda) + \Delta_j f'(R_\lambda) + \frac{1}{2} \Delta_j^2 f''(R_\lambda) + \dots$$



und  $\frac{1}{2} \pi$  sind die einzigen Lösungen der Gleichung  $\frac{1}{2} \pi = \frac{1}{2} \pi$  und  $\frac{1}{2} \pi = \frac{1}{2} \pi$  sind die einzigen Lösungen der Gleichung  $\frac{1}{2} \pi = \frac{1}{2} \pi$ .

$$(10) \quad \frac{1}{2} \pi = \frac{1}{2} \pi$$

Die Gleichung  $\frac{1}{2} \pi = \frac{1}{2} \pi$  ist eine Gleichung der ersten Ordnung und hat die Lösung  $\frac{1}{2} \pi = \frac{1}{2} \pi$ .

Die Gleichung  $\frac{1}{2} \pi = \frac{1}{2} \pi$  ist eine Gleichung der ersten Ordnung und hat die Lösung  $\frac{1}{2} \pi = \frac{1}{2} \pi$ .

$$(11) \quad \frac{1}{2} \pi = \frac{1}{2} \pi$$

Die Gleichung  $\frac{1}{2} \pi = \frac{1}{2} \pi$  ist eine Gleichung der ersten Ordnung und hat die Lösung  $\frac{1}{2} \pi = \frac{1}{2} \pi$ .

Die Gleichung  $\frac{1}{2} \pi = \frac{1}{2} \pi$  ist eine Gleichung der ersten Ordnung und hat die Lösung  $\frac{1}{2} \pi = \frac{1}{2} \pi$ .

Die Gleichung  $\frac{1}{2} \pi = \frac{1}{2} \pi$  ist eine Gleichung der ersten Ordnung und hat die Lösung  $\frac{1}{2} \pi = \frac{1}{2} \pi$ .

Die Gleichung  $\frac{1}{2} \pi = \frac{1}{2} \pi$  ist eine Gleichung der ersten Ordnung und hat die Lösung  $\frac{1}{2} \pi = \frac{1}{2} \pi$ .

$$(12) \quad \frac{1}{2} \pi = \frac{1}{2} \pi$$



where  $\Delta_j = |\vec{u}_{kj}| - |\vec{R}_\lambda|$ . Denoting  $f(R_\lambda)$  by  $f$  and  $f'(R_\lambda)$  by  $f'$ , we have

$$f_j(u_{kj}) = f(R_\lambda) \left[ 1 + \Delta_j \frac{f'}{f} + \frac{\Delta_j^2}{2} \frac{f''}{f} + \dots \right]. \quad (24)$$

We define the product  $\prod_j f_j(u_{kj}) = F_t$ , so that

$$r_1(1) = r_1 \phi_1^*(1) \phi_1(1) F_1. \quad (25)$$

We have

$$F_k = \left[ \prod_t f(R_{\lambda t}) \right] \prod_j \left[ 1 + \Delta_j \frac{f'}{f} + \frac{\Delta_j^2}{2} \frac{f''}{f} + \dots \right].$$

We introduce a quantity  $G_k$  where

$$F_k = \left[ \prod_t f(R_{\lambda t}) \right] e^{G_k} \quad (26)$$

$G_k$  is defined as follows:

$$\begin{aligned} G_k &= \sum_j \ln \left[ 1 + \Delta_j \frac{f'}{f} + \frac{\Delta_j^2}{2} \frac{f''}{f} + \dots \right] \\ &= \sum_j \ln \left[ 1 + \Delta_j \frac{f'}{f} + \frac{\Delta_j^2}{2} \frac{f''}{f} + \dots \right]. \end{aligned}$$

But  $\ln(1+x) = x - x^2/2 + x^3/3 - x^4/4 + \dots$ , so that  $G_k$  becomes

$$G_k = \sum_j \Delta_j (f'/f) + (\Delta_j^2/2)(f''/f) - (\Delta_j^2/2)(f')^2/(f)^2 + \dots$$

But  $(d/du)(f'/f) = [f f'' - (f')^2]/f^2$ , so we can write

$$G_k = \sum_j G_{k,j} = \sum_j \Delta_j (f'/f)_{R_\lambda} + (\Delta_j^2/2)(d/du [f'/f])_{R_\lambda} + \dots \quad (27)$$

... ..

...

... ..

... ..

... ..

...

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

... ..

We partially imposed the constraint on  $r_{1j}$  in evaluating (23). We now complete the process by evaluating  $G_k$  for  $\vec{r}_k = \vec{r}_1$ , the position of particle 1, remembering that  $f_j(u_{kj})$  is a function of the distance from lattice site  $j$ . The evaluation of  $G_k$  proceeds by performing the sum  $\sum_j \Delta_j$  and  $\sum_j \Delta_j^2$  for constant  $R_\lambda$ , corresponding to a shell of atoms at constant radius, and adding over shells.

$$\text{Now } \sum_j \Delta_j = \sum_j (|u_j| - |R_{1j}|) = \sum_j (\sqrt{R_{1j}^2 + q_1^2 - 2q_1 R_{1j} \cos \theta} - R_{1j}).$$

[Figure (4) shows the relationship between  $u$ ,  $q$  and  $R$ .] Expanding, we get  $\sum_j \Delta_j = \sum_j \{R_{1j}[1 + q_1^2/(2R_{1j}^2) - q_1 \cos \theta/R_{1j} - 4q_1^2 \cos^2 \theta/(8R_{1j}^2) + \dots] - R_{1j}\}$ . The sum over  $\cos \theta$  yields precisely zero in a Bravais lattice, and in a hexagonal close-packed lattice is zero in the spherically symmetric approximation. We take the average value of  $\cos^2 \theta$  to be  $1/3$ , getting

$$\sum_j \Delta_j = \sum_j \frac{q_1^2}{2R_{1j}} (1 - \cos^2 \theta) + \dots = \sum_j \frac{q_1^2}{3R_{1j}} + O(q_1^4).$$

Putting all members of the sum with the same  $R_{1j}$  together, we have

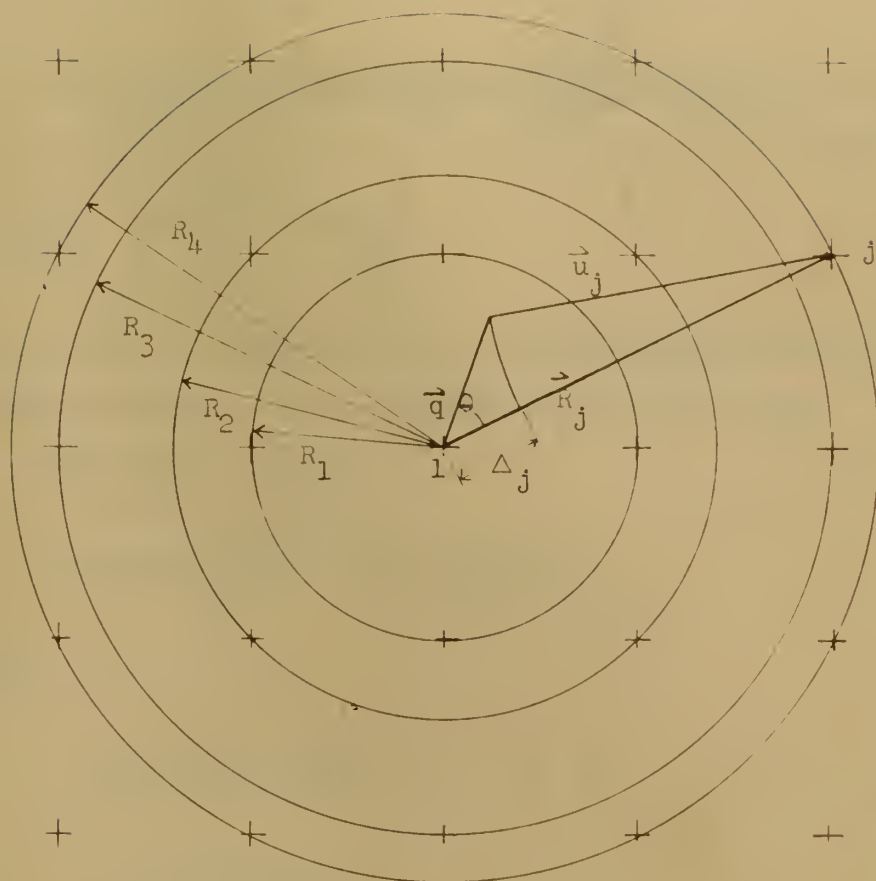
$$\sum_j \Delta_j = \sum_\lambda \frac{n_\lambda q_1^2}{3 R_\lambda}, \quad (28)$$

where there are  $n_\lambda$  members in the shell at distance  $R_\lambda$  [see Fig. (4)].

Similarly,

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_j \Delta_j^2 &= \sum_j \{R_{1j}^2 + q_1^2 - 2q_1 R_{1j} \cos \theta + R_{1j}^2 \\ &\quad - 2R_{1j}^2(1 + \frac{q_1^2}{2R_{1j}^2} - \frac{q_1}{R_{1j}} \cos \theta - \frac{4q_1^2}{8R_{1j}^2} \cos^2 \theta + \dots)\} \end{aligned}$$





$\lambda$	$n_\lambda$	$R_\lambda$
1	4	1
2	4	1.414
3	4	2
4	8	2.22

$$\sum_j f(R_j) = \sum_\lambda n_\lambda f(R_\lambda)$$

Figure 4. Lattice Sum for Two-Dimensional Square Lattice





$$\begin{aligned}
&= \sum_j q_1^2 \cos^2 \theta + O(q_1^4) = \sum_j \frac{q_1^2}{3} + O(q_1^4) \\
\sum_j \Delta_{1j}^2 &= \sum_\lambda \frac{n_\lambda q_1^2}{3} + O(q_1^4) \quad (29)
\end{aligned}$$

We did not have to assume a Bravais lattice or spherical symmetry to eliminate the term in  $\cos \theta$  leading to the result (29).

We now have from (27)

$$G_1 = \sum_\lambda \frac{n_\lambda q_1^2}{3} \left[ \frac{1}{u} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{d}{du} \right] \frac{f'}{f} \Big|_{R_\lambda}.$$

We define

$$G_\lambda = \left[ \frac{1}{u} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{d}{du} \right] \frac{f'}{f} \Big|_{R_\lambda}, \quad (30)$$

$$G_1 = \sum_\lambda \frac{n_\lambda}{3} q_1^2 G_\lambda.$$

Now, using (25) and (26),

$$\begin{aligned}
r_1(1) &= \sum_i \phi_i^*(1) \phi_i(1) F_1 \\
&= \sum_i \phi_i^*(1) \phi_i(1) \prod_\lambda r(R_\lambda)^{n_\lambda} e^{G_1} \\
&= \sum_i \phi_i^*(1) \phi_i(1) \left( \prod_\lambda r(R_\lambda)^{n_\lambda} \right) e^{\sum_\lambda \frac{n_\lambda}{3} G_\lambda q_1^2}. \quad (31)
\end{aligned}$$

The manipulations of formulas (24) to (31) have given us an expression for the probability density of an atom, determined by correlations with all the other atoms of the solid. This important result is the projection in ordinary three-dimensional space of the probability density described in the space with  $3N + N(N-1)/2$  variables.



We now put (18) in a form involving  $\delta$ , the parameter of the Gaussian representation for  $\gamma$ . We have  $\gamma_1(1) = e^{-\delta^2 q_1^2 / (\pi \delta^2)^{3/2}}$ , by hypothesis. Hence,

$$\begin{aligned} \gamma_1(1)(\pi \delta^2)^{3/2} &= e^{-\delta^2 q_1^2} \\ &= A \sum_1 |\phi_1(1)|^2 e^{\sum_{\lambda} \frac{n_{\lambda}}{3} \epsilon_{\lambda} q_1^2}. \end{aligned} \quad (32)$$

Here,  $A$  is a normalizing factor.

Taking the logarithm, we have

$$\delta^2 = - \sum_{\lambda} \frac{n_{\lambda}}{3} \epsilon_{\lambda} - \frac{\ln A \sum_1 |\phi_1(1)|^2}{q_1^2}. \quad (33)$$

Our assumption that  $\gamma_1(1) = e^{-\delta^2 q_1^2}$  evidently depends on the relation

$$\lim_{\vec{r}_1 \rightarrow \vec{R}_1} A \sum_1 \phi_1^2(\vec{r}_1) = e^{-\delta^2 q_1^2}. \quad (34)$$

To work with (34), we must consider the  $\phi$ 's in more detail. We assume that they fit the symmetry of the lattice. For example, in a simple cubic lattice, they would have the form

$$\cos \left( \frac{\pi x}{n_1 a} + \beta_{n_1} \right) \cos \left( \frac{\pi y}{n_j a} + \beta_{n_j} \right) \cos \left( \frac{\pi z}{n_k a} + \beta_{n_k} \right),$$

where  $n = N + 1, N, N - 1, \dots, 6, 5, 4, 3, 2, 1, 1/2, 1/3, 1/4, \dots, 1/N - 1, 1/N, 1/N + 1, \dots$  and the  $\beta_{n_i}$  are phase factors which place the waves in the lattice, so that lattice sites are at the maxima for odd  $n$  and  $1/n$  and so that the maxima for even  $n$  or  $1/n$  are midway between atoms. Thus, we have



and the remaining part of the boundary is the part of the circle

$$x^2 + y^2 = 1 \text{ for } x \geq 0, y \geq 0. \text{ The boundary is the part of the circle } x^2 + y^2 = 1 \text{ for } x \geq 0, y \geq 0.$$

which is the part of the circle

$$x^2 + y^2 = 1 \text{ for } x \geq 0, y \geq 0. \text{ The boundary is the part of the circle } x^2 + y^2 = 1 \text{ for } x \geq 0, y \geq 0.$$

which is the part of the circle

which is the part of the circle

$$x^2 + y^2 = 1 \text{ for } x \geq 0, y \geq 0. \text{ The boundary is the part of the circle } x^2 + y^2 = 1 \text{ for } x \geq 0, y \geq 0.$$

$$x^2 + y^2 = 1 \text{ for } x \geq 0, y \geq 0. \text{ The boundary is the part of the circle } x^2 + y^2 = 1 \text{ for } x \geq 0, y \geq 0.$$

which is the part of the circle

$$x^2 + y^2 = 1 \text{ for } x \geq 0, y \geq 0. \text{ The boundary is the part of the circle } x^2 + y^2 = 1 \text{ for } x \geq 0, y \geq 0.$$

which is the part of the circle

which is the part of the circle

which is the part of the circle

$$\left( x^2 + y^2 = 1 \right) \text{ for } x \geq 0, y \geq 0. \text{ The boundary is the part of the circle } x^2 + y^2 = 1 \text{ for } x \geq 0, y \geq 0.$$

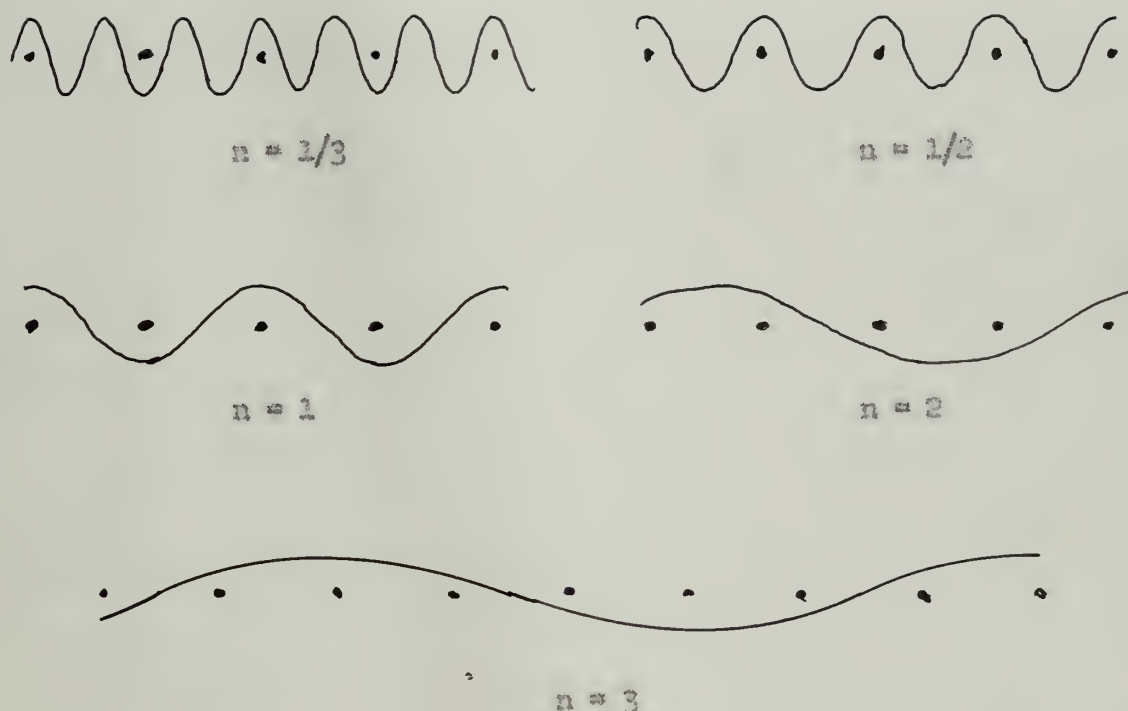
which is the part of the circle

which is the part of the circle

which is the part of the circle

which is the part of the circle

which is the part of the circle



Evidently the waves with  $n < 1$  can be used to construct a packet showing the probability density near individual lattice sites. The long waves, with  $n > 1$ , do not enter into such packets, but appear when we consider several particles together. For example, we can see from the diagram that if we consider 4 atoms in a row, we must deal with  $n = 1$ ,  $n = 2$ ,  $n = 3$ , and  $n = 4$ . Longer wavelengths will not enter.

In performing the integral (22), we could just as well integrate over  $k$  and evaluate the correlation with  $j$ , as perform the integral over  $d\vec{r}_j$ . This consideration, together with our formation of the product  $\pi f_j(u_{1j})$ , leads us to the following interpretation of  $\pi \int \gamma(k) \chi_{1k}^2 d\vec{k}$ : It forms a packet of waves, with wavelengths shorter than about  $1/\delta^2$ , near  $\vec{k}_1$ . Therefore, the remaining  $\phi_1$ , which appear explicitly, are determined by other considerations than correlations. For example, they



could be called upon to permit constructing states conforming to the Pauli principle, or to make up eigenstates of parity.

Lowdin,<sup>1</sup> in the third paper of his series on many-particle systems, describes the use of two such states, those for  $n = 1$  and  $n = 1/2$ , as a symmetrized trial function for considering pair interactions in a system such as ours.

In Appendix II, we evaluate the sum  $\sum_1 \phi_1^2(\vec{r}_1)$  in the somewhat arbitrary case of the central atom ( $\vec{R}_1 = 0$ ) in a cube of atoms with an odd number of atoms along each edge, requiring symmetry about  $\vec{R}_1$ . In this case,  $n_1$  can assume only odd values and all the  $\beta_n$  are zero. We assume that the Pauli principle permits two particles in each of the  $N/2$  states  $n_1 = 1, 3, \dots (N)^{1/3}$ . We take the long wavelength component of  $\phi_1$  to be

$$\phi_1(r) \rightarrow C_{1jk} \cos\left(\frac{\pi x}{n_1 a}\right) \cos\left(\frac{\pi y}{n_2 a}\right) \cos\left(\frac{\pi z}{n_3 a}\right) \cdot n = 1, 3, 5 \dots (N)^{1/3}$$

We find that  $A = 1/(\sum_{1jk} C_{1jk}^2)$ , and that all  $N$  of the  $C_{1jk}$  are equal to the same quantity  $C_0 = [\delta_0^3 e / ((2\pi)^{3/2} N \beta(a))]^{1/2}$ . In this expression for  $C_0$ ,  $\beta(a)$  is the value of the correlation product  $\sum_k \chi(R_{1k})$ , where  $R_{1k}$  is the distance from lattice site 1 to lattice site  $k$ . The values of the  $C$ 's do not enter into (34), however, and the  $n_1$  in the denominators of the arguments of the cosines give the convenient result:

$$e^{-a^2 q^2} = e^{-\frac{\pi^4 q^2}{8N^{1/3} a^2}} \quad (35)$$





We then have, for  $\delta^2$ ,

$$\begin{aligned}\delta^2 &= \delta_0^2 + \alpha^2, \\ \delta_0^2 &= - \sum_{\lambda} \frac{R_{\lambda} \epsilon_{\lambda}}{3},\end{aligned}\quad (36)$$

where  $\alpha^2$  is a term of order  $N^{-1/3}$ , hence negligible for large systems.

In Appendix D, we derive expressions for  $\epsilon_{\lambda}$ . We find that  $\epsilon_{\lambda}$  has two parts. The first part,  $\epsilon_{\lambda 0}$ , is independent of  $\delta^2$ , and another part,  $\epsilon_{\lambda 1}$ , depends on  $\delta^2$ , but is a small correction to  $\epsilon_{\lambda}$ . In the same appendix, we show two expressions for  $\epsilon_{\lambda 0}$ . The first form is

$$\epsilon_{\lambda 0,1} = - \frac{B \sigma^4}{R_{\lambda}^4} \left[ 1 + \frac{B \sigma^4}{9 R_{\lambda}^4} - \frac{\sigma^6}{R_{\lambda}^6} + \frac{B^2 \sigma^8}{R_{\lambda}^8} \frac{2}{15} + O\left(\frac{\sigma^{10}}{R_{\lambda}^{10}}\right) \right], \quad (37)$$

where  $B = \frac{\ln k \epsilon \sigma^2}{\hbar^2}$ .  $B = 16.60$  for  $\text{He}^3$ . We obtain (37) by applying (30) to  $f'/f = (x^2)'/x^2$ , where  $x$  is in the series representation. The second form is

$$\epsilon_{\lambda 0,2} = \frac{1 - x(R_{\lambda})}{R_{\lambda}^2 x(R_{\lambda})} \left[ \frac{(1 + \gamma R_{\lambda})^2}{x(R_{\lambda})} - (1 + 2\gamma R_{\lambda}) \right], \quad (38)$$

where we use the representation  $x = 1 - (r_0/r)e^{-r(r-r_0)}$ ,  $\gamma = 0.696$ , and  $r_0 = 2.52$ , for  $\text{He}^3$ . Note that  $\epsilon_{\lambda 0}$  is independent of the lattice symmetry. We have shown (37) and (38) in Figure 5.

The part of  $\epsilon_{\lambda}$  which depends on  $\delta$  is

Let  $f(x) = x^2 + 2x + 1$  and  $g(x) = x^2 + 1$ .

$$f(x) = x^2 + 2x + 1 = (x+1)^2$$

and  $g(x) = x^2 + 1$  is a polynomial of degree 2.

$$(1) \quad \text{Find the remainder when } f(x) \text{ is divided by } g(x).$$

Since  $f(x) = (x+1)^2$  and  $g(x) = x^2 + 1$ , we can write

$$f(x) = q(x)g(x) + r(x)$$

where  $q(x)$  is the quotient and  $r(x)$  is the remainder.

$$\text{Since } f(x) = (x+1)^2 = x^2 + 2x + 1 \text{ and } g(x) = x^2 + 1,$$

$$\text{we have } f(x) = 1 \cdot g(x) + 2x.$$

Thus, the remainder when  $f(x)$  is divided by  $g(x)$  is  $2x$ .

$$\text{Hence, the remainder is } 2x.$$

Therefore, the remainder when  $f(x)$  is divided by  $g(x)$  is  $2x$ .

Thus, the remainder when  $f(x)$  is divided by  $g(x)$  is  $2x$ .

Hence, the remainder when  $f(x)$  is divided by  $g(x)$  is  $2x$ .

Therefore, the remainder when  $f(x)$  is divided by  $g(x)$  is  $2x$ .

Hence, the remainder when  $f(x)$  is divided by  $g(x)$  is  $2x$ .

Therefore, the remainder when  $f(x)$  is divided by  $g(x)$  is  $2x$ .

Hence, the remainder when  $f(x)$  is divided by  $g(x)$  is  $2x$ .

Therefore, the remainder when  $f(x)$  is divided by  $g(x)$  is  $2x$ .

Hence, the remainder when  $f(x)$  is divided by  $g(x)$  is  $2x$ .

Therefore, the remainder when  $f(x)$  is divided by  $g(x)$  is  $2x$ .

Hence, the remainder when  $f(x)$  is divided by  $g(x)$  is  $2x$ .

Therefore, the remainder when  $f(x)$  is divided by  $g(x)$  is  $2x$ .

Hence, the remainder when  $f(x)$  is divided by  $g(x)$  is  $2x$ .

Therefore, the remainder when  $f(x)$  is divided by  $g(x)$  is  $2x$ .

Hence, the remainder when  $f(x)$  is divided by  $g(x)$  is  $2x$ .

Therefore, the remainder when  $f(x)$  is divided by  $g(x)$  is  $2x$ .

Hence, the remainder when  $f(x)$  is divided by  $g(x)$  is  $2x$ .

Therefore, the remainder when  $f(x)$  is divided by  $g(x)$  is  $2x$ .

Hence, the remainder when  $f(x)$  is divided by  $g(x)$  is  $2x$ .

Therefore, the remainder when  $f(x)$  is divided by  $g(x)$  is  $2x$ .

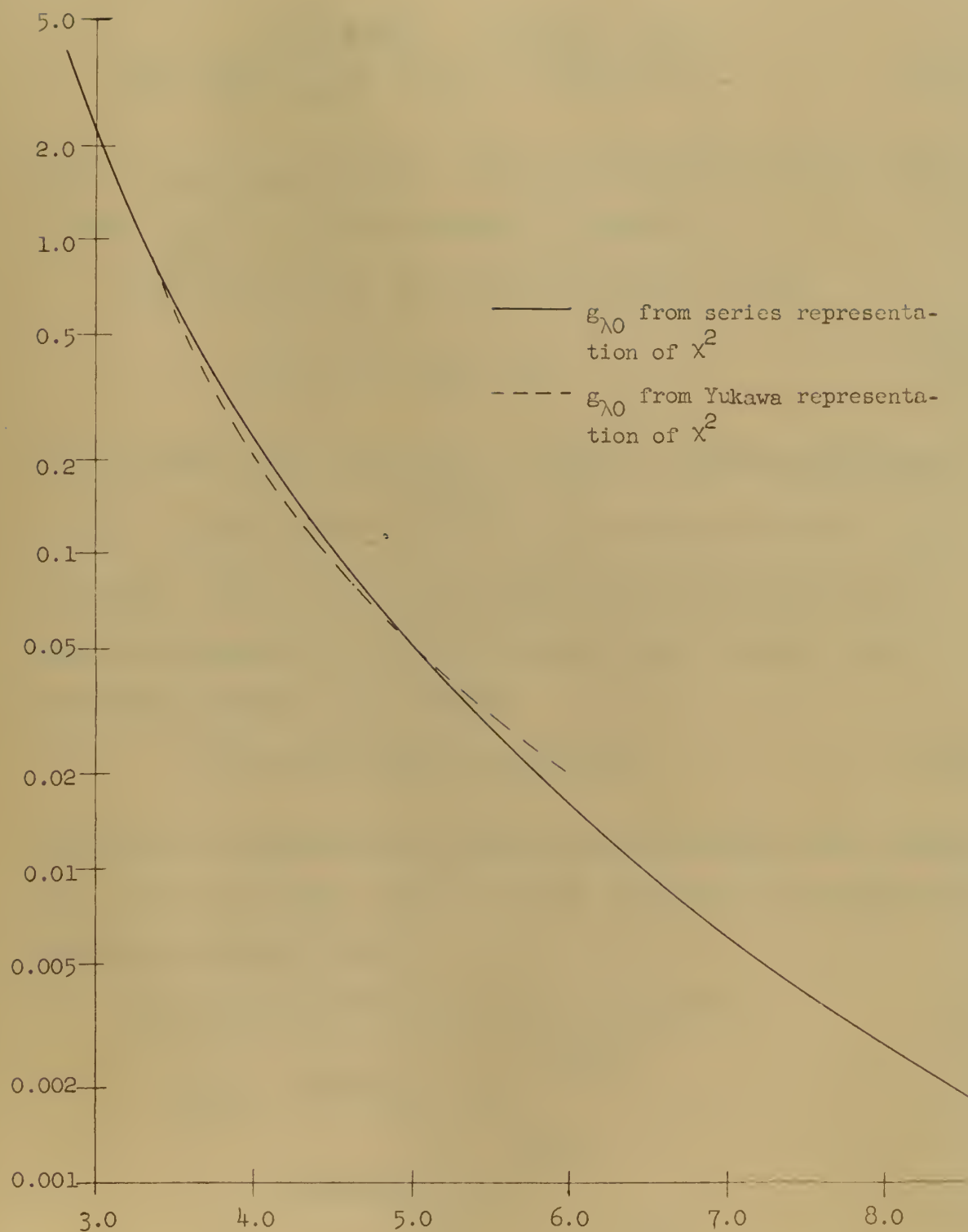


Figure 5. Elements of the Logarithmic Sum,  $g_{\lambda 0}$ , Plotted Against Radial Distance.





$$E_{\lambda 1} = \frac{-e}{\sqrt{\pi} [1 + \phi(8[R_{\lambda} - r_0])] } \left\{ \frac{8^3 r_0 (R_{\lambda} - r_0)}{2 R_{\lambda}} \right\} \quad (39)$$

where  $\phi$  is the error integral. There are additional negligible terms of order  $(E_{\lambda 1})^2$ , which are discussed in Appendix D.

From (35), (37) and (39), we can calculate  $S^2 \approx S_0^2$

$$S_0^2 = \sum_{\lambda} \frac{n_{\lambda}}{3} (E_{\lambda 0} + E_{\lambda 1}) \quad (40)$$

We first obtain  $S_0^2$  by evaluating  $\sum_{\lambda} \frac{n_{\lambda} E_{\lambda 0}}{3}$ , a quantity independent of  $S_0^2$ . We then evaluate  $\sum_{\lambda} \frac{n_{\lambda} E_{\lambda 1}}{3}$  until a consistent value of  $S_0^2$  is obtained. Figure (6) shows the result of such calculations. The calculated values fall on a smooth curve which can be fitted, with no discernible deviation, to the formula

$$S_0^2 = 0.99 + 4.22(a - 4.064)^2 \text{ \AA}^{-2} \quad (41)$$

Formula (41) is characteristic of  $\text{He}^3$  in the body-centered cubic lattice, and is valid in the range  $3.43 < a < 3.82$ . Appendix E is a sample calculation for a point on Fig. 6.

The single-particle representation is therefore

$$\begin{aligned} r_j(\vec{r}_j) &= (\text{const}) \sum_i |\phi_i \vec{r}_j|^2 e^{-S_0^2 q^2} \\ &= (\text{const}) e^{-\alpha^2 q^2} e^{-S_0^2 q^2} \\ &= (\text{const}) e^{-S_0^2 q^2} [1 + o(n^{-1/3})] \\ &\approx (\text{const}) e^{-[0.99 + 4.22(a - 4.064)^2] q^2} \end{aligned} \quad (42)$$



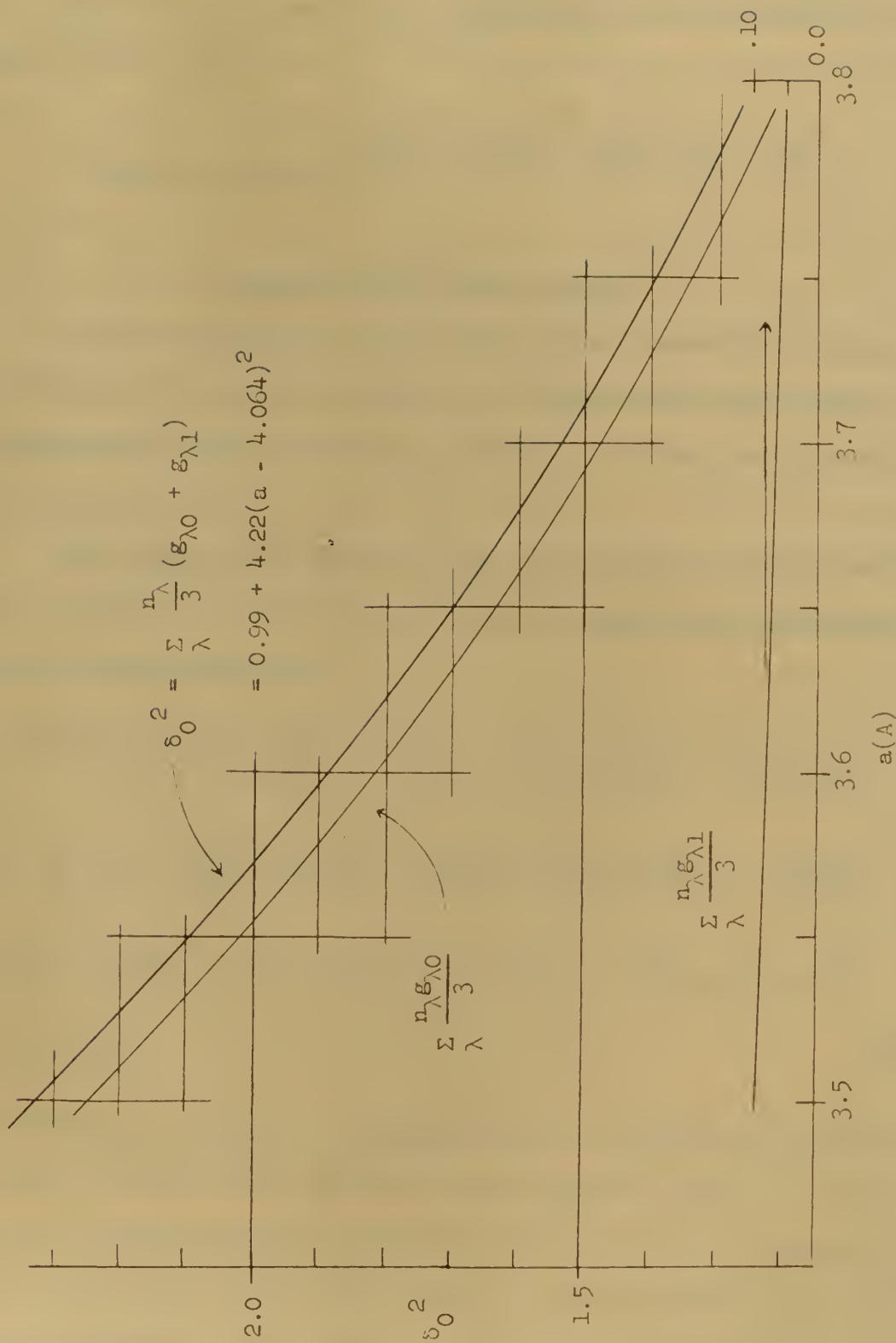


Figure 6. The Probability Density Parameter  $\delta_0^2$  Plotted Against Lattice Constant  $a$  for Body-Centered Cubic Magnesium.





From (42) we also have the complete single-particle density matrix  $\gamma(1) = \sum_j \gamma_j(1)$

$$\gamma(1) = \sum_j (\text{const}) e^{-[0.99 + 4.22(a - 4.064)^2](\vec{R}_j - \vec{r}_1)^2}$$

### Single-Particle Energy Density

In this section we use the single particle probability density we have obtained in the last section to determine the average energy. The expression contains the lattice constant  $a$  through the probability density parameter  $\delta$ .

Using operators introduced in Eq. (12), together with the density matrix of (13), we can write the  $N$  particle energy density matrix in the Pluvierge representation:

$$\begin{aligned} \langle E \rangle = & \frac{1}{A} \int \sum_i \left( T_i \left( \frac{\partial}{\partial \vec{r}_i} \right) + V_i(r_i) + \sum_j [T_{ij} \left( \frac{\partial}{\partial \vec{r}_{ij}} \right) + \frac{1}{2} V_{ij}(r_{ij}) \right. \right. \\ & \left. \left. + U'_{ij} \right] \right) \sum_p \sum_{p'} [\phi_1^*(\vec{r}'_1) \phi_2^*(\vec{r}'_2) \dots \phi_N^*(\vec{r}'_N) \phi_1(\vec{r}_1) \phi_2(\vec{r}_2) \dots \phi_N(\vec{r}_N)] \\ & [X_{12}^*(r'_{12}) X_{13}^*(r'_{13}) \dots X_{N-1 N}^*(r'_{N-1 N}) X_{12}(r_{12}) \dots X_{N-1 N}(r_{N-1 N})] \\ & d\vec{r}_1 d\vec{r}_2 \dots d\vec{r}_N. \end{aligned} \quad (43)$$

The normalization integral is represented by  $A$ , which has the form of the integral shown in (43), with the energy operator replaced by unity. The prime coordinates permit the wave functions to act as a non-diagonal density matrix under differential operators. We must bear in mind the relationship between the  $\vec{r}_1$  and  $\vec{r}_{1j}$  where  $\vec{r}_{1j}$  is a dependent variable

of the following form:  $\phi(x) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{a_n}{n^s}$  where  $a_n$  is a multiplicative function.

$$f(s) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{a_n}{n^s} = \prod_p \left( 1 + \frac{a_p}{p^s} + \frac{a_{p^2}}{p^{2s}} + \dots \right)$$

$$f(s) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{a_n}{n^s} = \prod_p \left( 1 + \frac{a_p}{p^s} + \frac{a_{p^2}}{p^{2s}} + \dots \right)$$

### THEOREM 1.1

Let  $f(s)$  be a function of the form  $f(s) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{a_n}{n^s}$  where  $a_n$  is a multiplicative function.

Suppose that  $f(s)$  is analytic for  $\sigma > 1$  and that  $f(s)$  has a simple pole at  $s=1$ .

Then the following asymptotic formula holds for the partial sums  $S(x) = \sum_{n \leq x} a_n$ :

$$S(x) \sim \frac{1}{2\pi i} \int_{\sigma-i\infty}^{\sigma+i\infty} f(s) x^s ds$$

where  $\sigma > 1$  is any real number.

Proof. Let  $\sigma > 1$  be any real number. Then we have

$$S(x) = \sum_{n \leq x} a_n = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n \chi_{[1, x]}(n)$$

$$= \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{a_n}{n^s} \int_0^x t^{s-1} dt = \int_0^x \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{a_n t^{s-1}}{n^s} dt = \int_0^x f(s) t^{s-1} dt$$

$$= \int_0^x f(s) t^{s-1} dt = \int_0^x f(s) t^{s-1} dt = \int_0^x f(s) t^{s-1} dt$$

$$= \int_0^x f(s) t^{s-1} dt = \int_0^x f(s) t^{s-1} dt = \int_0^x f(s) t^{s-1} dt$$

$$(2) \quad \dots$$

where  $\chi_{[1, x]}(n)$  is the characteristic function of the interval  $[1, x]$ .

Let  $\sigma > 1$  be any real number. Then we have

$\int_0^x \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{a_n t^{s-1}}{n^s} dt = \int_0^x f(s) t^{s-1} dt$

where  $\chi_{[1, x]}(n)$  is the characteristic function of the interval  $[1, x]$ .

Let  $\sigma > 1$  be any real number. Then we have

useful in differentiation, as explained in Appendix A. The permutation operator  $P'$  permutes the prime coordinates according to Fermi statistics, just as  $P$  permutes the unprimed coordinates.

We simplify (43) by noting that the operator  $T_{1j} + 1/2 V_{1j}$  makes no contribution, since  $[T_{1j} + 1/2 V_{1j}] \chi_{1j} = 0$  for all  $i, j$ . For our symmetry we assume that the term in  $H'$  is negligible compared to the term in  $T$ . As explained more fully in Appendix F, firstly  $H'$  is short range because of the derivative  $\partial/\partial r_{1j}$  which vanishes at large  $r_{1j}$ , and therefore  $H'$  is proportional at most to  $H$  and not  $N(N-1)/2$ . Secondly, in a Bravais lattice, a large part of  $H'$  cancels out because  $H'$  is linear in relative displacement, and a given atom has a positive displacement with respect to one atom, and an equal and opposite displacement with respect to another atom. A contribution to  $H'$  remains which is proportional to the average square of the deviation from the lattice site. In Appendix F we present a plausibility argument that this contribution is considerably less than  $\langle T \rangle$ .

Taking  $V_1(\vec{r}_1)$  to be a constant, we are left with the term  $\langle T_1 \rangle$ :

$$\begin{aligned} \langle \sum_i T_{1i} \rangle &= \frac{1}{\Lambda} \int d\vec{X}_1 \sum_i T_{1i} \sum_t \phi_t^*(\vec{X}_1) \phi_t(\vec{X}_1) \\ &\times \left\{ \sum_P P_S \prod_{\substack{j \neq t \\ m \neq 1}} |\phi_j(\vec{X}_m)|^2 \prod_{j < m} \chi_{jm}^2(r_{jm}) \chi_{im}^2(r_{im}) d\vec{X}_m \right\} \quad (44) \end{aligned}$$

In (44) we show the symmetric permutation of all the coordinates in the  $\phi$ 's in the diagonal representation. Permutations in the diagonal repre-







sentation are the only ones that affect the single-particle operator

$T_1$ . (See the last relationship in (5).)

We note that the part in curly brackets is the function

$\prod_k \int r_k(\mathbf{r}) \chi_{1k}(\mathbf{r}'_{1k}) \chi_{1k}(\mathbf{r}_{1k}) d\vec{r}_{1k}$ . Noting that there are  $N$  identical terms in the sum over  $1$  (a result of the symmetric permutation generated by  $\sum_t \phi_t^2(1)$ ), we have

$$\begin{aligned} \left\langle \sum_1 T_1 \right\rangle &= \frac{N}{A} \int d\vec{r}_1 T_1 \sum_j \phi_j^*(1') \phi_j(1) \\ &\quad \prod_k \int r_k(k) \chi_{1k}(\mathbf{r}'_{1k}) \chi_{1k}(\mathbf{r}_{1k}) d\vec{r}_{1k}. \end{aligned} \quad (45)$$

We redefine  $f_k(u_{1k})$  in its non-diagonal form:

$$f_k(u_{1k}) = \int r_k(k) \chi_{1k}(\mathbf{r}'_{1k}) \chi_{1k}(\mathbf{r}_{1k}) d\vec{r}_{1k}. \quad (46)$$

So that (45) becomes

$$\left\langle \sum_1 T_1 \right\rangle_1 = \frac{N}{A} \int d\vec{r}_1 T_1 \left\{ \left[ \sum_j \phi_j^*(1') \phi_j(1) \right] \prod_k f_k(u_{1k}) \right\}. \quad (47)$$

When we introduce  $\prod_k f_k(u_{1k})$ , we evaluate  $\left\langle \sum_1 T_1 \right\rangle_1$ , where

$$\left\langle \sum_1 T_1 \right\rangle = \sum_j \left\langle \sum_1 T_1 \right\rangle_j, \text{ since } \prod_k f_k(u_{1k}) \text{ describes the probability}$$

density near lattice site 1. This modification results from the same considerations as affected  $r(1)$  in Eq. (18). The normalization factor  $A$  is

$$A = \int \sum_1 |\phi_1(1)|^2 \prod_k f_k(u_{1k}) d\vec{r}_1. \quad (48)$$

Carrying out the operations in (47), we have



$$\begin{aligned}
\langle \sum_i T_i \rangle = & \left( -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \right) \frac{N}{A} \left( \int d\vec{r}_1 \sum_j \phi_j(1) \nabla_1^2 \phi_j(1) \sum_k f_k \right. \\
& + \int d\vec{r}_1 \left( \sum_j \phi_j^* \vec{\nabla} \phi_j \right) \cdot \vec{\nabla} \left( \sum_k f_k \right) \\
& + \int d\vec{r}_1 \sum_j |\phi_j(1)|^2 \sum_t r_t(t) \chi(r_{1t}) \nabla_1^2 \chi(r_{1t}) d\vec{r}_t \\
& \left. \sum_{k/t,1} f_k(u_{1k}) \right). \quad (49)
\end{aligned}$$

The brackets in the second term refer to the non-diagonal nature of  $\sum_k f_k$ . This term of (49) vanishes because  $\vec{\nabla} \left( \sum_k f_k \right)$  contains a sum over the lattice points  $k$ , dotted into the constant vector  $\sum_j \phi_j^* \vec{\nabla} \phi_j$ . Upon summation, cosine term in the scalar product gives zero.

In the last section we learned we could treat  $\sum_j |\phi_j(1)|^2$  as  $\frac{\pi^4 q^2}{6\hbar^{1/3} a^2}$ , hence the first term is expected to be proportional to  $N^{-1/6}$ , and therefore negligible. In Appendix II we consider this term in detail and verify that it is proportional to  $N^{-1/6}$ . In the next section we consider exchange, and find that the contribution of the  $\phi$ 's to the energy is indeed small, though not proportional to  $N^{-1/6}$ . The factor  $N^{-1/6}$  arises as a direct consequence of neglecting spin and statistics in (49).

The third term will provide the cohesive energy. However, to do the integral over  $d\vec{r}_t$ , we must apply the constraint  $r_{1j} = \sqrt{s_{1j} \cdot s_{1j}}$

$$f_2(x) = \frac{1}{2} \left( f_1(x) + f_1\left(\frac{1}{x}\right) \right)$$

$$f_2(x) = \frac{1}{2} \left( f_1(x) + f_1\left(\frac{1}{x}\right) \right)$$

$$f_2(x) = \frac{1}{2} \left( f_1(x) + f_1\left(\frac{1}{x}\right) \right)$$

(10)

$$f_2(x) = \frac{1}{2} \left( f_1(x) + f_1\left(\frac{1}{x}\right) \right)$$

The function  $f_2(x)$  is defined as the average of  $f_1(x)$  and  $f_1(1/x)$ . This function is symmetric about the line  $x=1$ . The function  $f_2(x)$  is defined as the average of  $f_1(x)$  and  $f_1(1/x)$ . This function is symmetric about the line  $x=1$ .

$$f_2(x) = \frac{1}{2} \left( f_1(x) + f_1\left(\frac{1}{x}\right) \right)$$

$$f_2(x) = \frac{1}{2} \left( f_1(x) + f_1\left(\frac{1}{x}\right) \right)$$

The function  $f_2(x)$  is defined as the average of  $f_1(x)$  and  $f_1(1/x)$ . This function is symmetric about the line  $x=1$ .

$$f_2(x) = \frac{1}{2} \left( f_1(x) + f_1\left(\frac{1}{x}\right) \right)$$

The function  $f_2(x)$  is defined as the average of  $f_1(x)$  and  $f_1(1/x)$ . This function is symmetric about the line  $x=1$ .

The function  $f_2(x)$  is defined as the average of  $f_1(x)$  and  $f_1(1/x)$ . This function is symmetric about the line  $x=1$ .

The function  $f_2(x)$  is defined as the average of  $f_1(x)$  and  $f_1(1/x)$ . This function is symmetric about the line  $x=1$ .

The function  $f_2(x)$  is defined as the average of  $f_1(x)$  and  $f_1(1/x)$ . This function is symmetric about the line  $x=1$ .

The function  $f_2(x)$  is defined as the average of  $f_1(x)$  and  $f_1(1/x)$ . This function is symmetric about the line  $x=1$ .

The function  $f_2(x)$  is defined as the average of  $f_1(x)$  and  $f_1(1/x)$ . This function is symmetric about the line  $x=1$ .



to the  $\chi$  functions. This we do before integration. The operator  $\nabla_1^2$  will operate on the result of the integration. Here  $\nabla_1^2$  takes derivatives of  $\chi(u_{1j})$  at point 1.

To deal with the integral  $\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \int r_t(t) \chi_{1t}(r_{1t}) \nabla_1^2 \chi_{1t}(r_{1t}) dr_t$ , we identify  $\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \chi \nabla^2 \chi$  with  $F(r_{1j})$ , and use the result of Appendix C. We show there that any integral of the form  $\int r_j(j) F(r_{1j}) dr_j$  is given approximately by  $F(u_{1j}) [1 + O \left( e^{-\frac{\delta^2(u_{1j}^2 - r_0^2)}{8u}} \right)]$  provided that  $F(X)$  is slowly varying near  $X = u_{1j}$  compared to the variation in  $r(j)$  near  $q_j = 0$ .

Then, defining the last term of (49) as  $\langle T \rangle_{1,8}$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \langle T \rangle_{1,8} &= \frac{\hbar}{A} \left( -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \right) \int d\vec{r}_1 \left[ \sum_j \chi(u_{1j}) \nabla_1^2 \chi(u_{1j}) \right] \\ &\quad \prod_{k \neq j,1} \chi^2(u_{1k}) \prod_t \left[ 1 + O \left( \frac{e^{-\frac{\delta^2(u_{1t} - r_0)^2}{8u_{1t}}}}{\delta u_{1t}} \right) \right] \end{aligned} \quad (50)$$

Rewriting (50) and neglecting a derivative

$$\sqrt{1 + O \left( \frac{e^{-\frac{\delta^2(u_{1t} - r_0)^2}{8u_{1t}}}}{\delta u_{1t}} \right)}, \text{ we get}$$

$$T_{1,8} = \frac{\hbar}{A} \left( -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \right) \int d\vec{r}_1 \sqrt{\prod_t f_t(u_{1t})} \nabla_1^2 \sqrt{\prod_t f_t(u_{1t})}, \quad (51)$$

$$\text{since } f_t(u_{1t}) = \chi_{1t}^2(u_{1t}) \left[ 1 + O \left( \frac{e^{-\frac{\delta^2(u_{1t} - r_0)^2}{8u_{1t}}}}{\delta u_{1t}} \right) \right].$$





The function  $\sqrt{\prod_t f_t(u_{1t})}$  is already known to us from Eq. (25)

$$\begin{aligned} r_1(1) &= \sum_1 |\phi_1(1)|^2 \prod_t f_t(u_{1t}) \\ &= e^{-c^2 q^2} e^{-\delta^2 q^2} (\text{const}) \end{aligned}$$

or

$$\prod_t f_t(u_{1t}) = (\text{const}) e^{-\delta^2 q^2}. \quad (52)$$

We must consider most carefully the way in which we combine the contributions of the Laplacian operating on each of the  $f_j$ , when we employ the representation  $e^{-\delta^2 q^2}$ . This special attention was also needed in evaluating  $\sum_j \Delta_j$  and  $\sum_j \Delta_j^2$  in the preceding section.

Each of the  $\sqrt{f_j}$  has a single variable  $u_{1j}$  or  $\Delta_j$  for  $\nabla^2$  to act upon. Each of the terms in the integral in (50) introduces a "kinetic energy" of relative motion obtained by taking  $\partial^2/\partial \Delta_j^2$  (motion normal to the line between 1 and  $j$  gives no contribution), and hence represents one degree of freedom. But  $\nabla^2$  not only takes derivatives in the direction  $\vec{R}_{1j}$ , but also two more derivatives of equal value in the two directions normal to  $\vec{R}_{1j}$ , or would treat each member  $j$  as three degrees of freedom. Hence, to use the spherically symmetric matrix  $e^{-\delta^2 q^2}$  to represent the influence of correlations on the energy of atom 1, in the single particle approximation, we must take 1/3 the result obtained by use of the Laplacian:

1211.  $\frac{1}{2} \pi$  and  $\frac{3}{2} \pi$  are the only angles for which  $\sin \theta = \frac{1}{2}$  and  $\cos \theta = \frac{\sqrt{3}}{2}$ .

$$\frac{1}{2} \pi \text{ and } \frac{3}{2} \pi \text{ are the only angles for which } \sin \theta = \frac{1}{2} \text{ and } \cos \theta = \frac{\sqrt{3}}{2}.$$

$$\sin \theta = \frac{1}{2} \text{ and } \cos \theta = \frac{\sqrt{3}}{2} \text{ for } \theta = \frac{1}{2} \pi \text{ and } \theta = \frac{3}{2} \pi.$$

$$\sin \theta = \frac{1}{2} \text{ and } \cos \theta = \frac{\sqrt{3}}{2} \text{ for } \theta = \frac{1}{2} \pi \text{ and } \theta = \frac{3}{2} \pi.$$

1212.  $\frac{1}{2} \pi$  and  $\frac{3}{2} \pi$  are the only angles for which  $\sin \theta = \frac{1}{2}$  and  $\cos \theta = \frac{\sqrt{3}}{2}$ .

1213.  $\frac{1}{2} \pi$  and  $\frac{3}{2} \pi$  are the only angles for which  $\sin \theta = \frac{1}{2}$  and  $\cos \theta = \frac{\sqrt{3}}{2}$ .

1214.  $\frac{1}{2} \pi$  and  $\frac{3}{2} \pi$  are the only angles for which  $\sin \theta = \frac{1}{2}$  and  $\cos \theta = \frac{\sqrt{3}}{2}$ .

1215.  $\frac{1}{2} \pi$  and  $\frac{3}{2} \pi$  are the only angles for which  $\sin \theta = \frac{1}{2}$  and  $\cos \theta = \frac{\sqrt{3}}{2}$ .

1216.  $\frac{1}{2} \pi$  and  $\frac{3}{2} \pi$  are the only angles for which  $\sin \theta = \frac{1}{2}$  and  $\cos \theta = \frac{\sqrt{3}}{2}$ .

1217.  $\frac{1}{2} \pi$  and  $\frac{3}{2} \pi$  are the only angles for which  $\sin \theta = \frac{1}{2}$  and  $\cos \theta = \frac{\sqrt{3}}{2}$ .

1218.  $\frac{1}{2} \pi$  and  $\frac{3}{2} \pi$  are the only angles for which  $\sin \theta = \frac{1}{2}$  and  $\cos \theta = \frac{\sqrt{3}}{2}$ .

1219.  $\frac{1}{2} \pi$  and  $\frac{3}{2} \pi$  are the only angles for which  $\sin \theta = \frac{1}{2}$  and  $\cos \theta = \frac{\sqrt{3}}{2}$ .

1220.  $\frac{1}{2} \pi$  and  $\frac{3}{2} \pi$  are the only angles for which  $\sin \theta = \frac{1}{2}$  and  $\cos \theta = \frac{\sqrt{3}}{2}$ .

$$\begin{aligned} \langle T_1 \rangle_1 = & -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m A} \left[ \int e^{-q_1^2 \delta_0^2} \sum_1 \phi_1^*(1) \nabla^2 \phi_1(1) d\vec{r}_1 \right. \\ & \left. + \int \sum_1 \phi_1^*(1) \phi_1(1) \exp(-q_1^2 \delta_0^2/2) \frac{\nabla^2}{3} \exp(-q_1^2 \delta_0^2/2) d\vec{r}_1 \right] \end{aligned} \quad (53)$$

$$A = \int e^{-\delta_0^2 q_1^2} \sum_1 |\phi_1(1)|^2 d\vec{r}_1. \quad (54)$$

In discussing Eq. (49), we have already seen that the first term of (53) is of order  $\alpha^2$  and hence of order  $N^{-1/6}$ , and negligible if we neglect overlap and exchange.

Therefore, the single-particle energy, from the second term of (53), is

$$\langle E \rangle = \frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \frac{1}{3} \frac{3 \delta_0^2}{2} = \frac{\hbar^2}{4m} \delta_0^2. \quad (55)$$

### Exchange Energy

(a) In this section, using the Plurimage form of the wave function, we consider the symmetry effects on the magnetic properties of the solid.

Entirely analogous with the treatment of electron exchange, we assume that the Pauli principle applies, so that we are limited to a state description of any pair of particles which is antisymmetric in the interchange of all the coordinates of the pair. We attempt to find the wave function of two-particle states of lowest energy, one symmetric in the space coordinates, corresponding to the triplet spin state and the



$$N(\alpha) = \frac{1}{2} \left( \alpha + \frac{1}{\alpha} \right)$$

$$(1) \quad \left[ \frac{1}{2} \left( \alpha^2 + \frac{1}{\alpha^2} \right) - \frac{1}{2} \left( \alpha + \frac{1}{\alpha} \right)^2 \right] = 0$$

$$(2) \quad \frac{1}{2} \left( \alpha + \frac{1}{\alpha} \right) = 1$$

Let  $\alpha$  be a root of the equation  $\alpha^2 - 2\alpha + 1 = 0$ . Then  $\alpha = 1$ .  
 Let  $\alpha$  be a root of the equation  $\alpha^2 + 2\alpha + 1 = 0$ . Then  $\alpha = -1$ .  
 Let  $\alpha$  be a root of the equation  $\alpha^2 - 1 = 0$ . Then  $\alpha = 1$  or  $\alpha = -1$ .

Let  $\alpha$  be a root of the equation  $\alpha^2 - 2\alpha + 1 = 0$ . Then  $\alpha = 1$ .

(3)  $\alpha = 1$

$$(4) \quad \alpha^2 - 2\alpha + 1 = 0$$

Let  $\alpha$  be a root of the equation  $\alpha^2 - 2\alpha + 1 = 0$ .

Let  $\alpha$  be a root of the equation  $\alpha^2 + 2\alpha + 1 = 0$ . Then  $\alpha = -1$ .  
 Let  $\alpha$  be a root of the equation  $\alpha^2 - 1 = 0$ . Then  $\alpha = 1$  or  $\alpha = -1$ .

Let  $\alpha$  be a root of the equation  $\alpha^2 - 2\alpha + 1 = 0$ . Then  $\alpha = 1$ .

Let  $\alpha$  be a root of the equation  $\alpha^2 + 2\alpha + 1 = 0$ . Then  $\alpha = -1$ .  
 Let  $\alpha$  be a root of the equation  $\alpha^2 - 1 = 0$ . Then  $\alpha = 1$  or  $\alpha = -1$ .  
 Let  $\alpha$  be a root of the equation  $\alpha^2 - 2\alpha + 1 = 0$ . Then  $\alpha = 1$ .  
 Let  $\alpha$  be a root of the equation  $\alpha^2 + 2\alpha + 1 = 0$ . Then  $\alpha = -1$ .  
 Let  $\alpha$  be a root of the equation  $\alpha^2 - 1 = 0$ . Then  $\alpha = 1$  or  $\alpha = -1$ .



other antisymmetric, corresponding to the singlet spin state. The energies of these states are compared, and we obtain the exchange energy.

$$J = E_{+1} - E_{-1}.$$

$E_{+1}$  is the singlet spin state energy,  $E_{-1}$  is the triplet energy. Positive  $J$  corresponds to parallel spins.

Our calculations will obtain  $\langle E \rangle_{\eta}$  ( $\eta = +1, -1$ ) and a normalization integral for each case, from which we can construct

$$E_{\eta} = \frac{\langle E \rangle_{\eta}}{\langle 1 \rangle_{\eta}} = \frac{\langle E \rangle + \eta \epsilon}{\langle 1 \rangle + \eta \Delta}.$$

Then we have:

$$J = \frac{2(\epsilon - \Delta \frac{\langle E \rangle}{\langle 1 \rangle})}{\langle 1 \rangle - \frac{\Delta^2}{\langle 1 \rangle}}. \quad (56)$$

Exchange in the many-body case is somewhat different than in the two-particle case, for which we have just defined  $J$ . We define exchange as exchange with respect to a class of neighbors, for example, exchange energy with next nearest neighbors.

We will compare the energy of the solid in two cases--one, when the spins of  $i$  and the class of neighbors are parallel, and, two, when these spins are antiparallel. If the exchange energy with respect to a given set of neighbors is positive, that exchange integral is termed ferromagnetic.

We proceed by writing down the Hamiltonian. We delete the term  $[1/2 V_{ij} + T_{ij}]$  because it yields zero in the product with  $\chi_{ij}$ . Accord-

other conditions, according to the theory of the present paper, the results of these calculations are not in agreement with the experimental results.

$$1. \quad \frac{1}{\rho} \frac{d\rho}{dt} = \frac{1}{\rho} \frac{d\rho}{d\tau} \frac{d\tau}{dt}$$

where  $\rho$  is the density of the gas,  $\tau$  is the time measured from the beginning of the reaction, and  $\frac{d\rho}{d\tau}$  is the rate of change of density with respect to time.

It is assumed that the reaction is of the type  $A + B \rightarrow C + D$ , and a constant

rate of reaction is assumed, so that  $\frac{d\rho}{d\tau} = k$ , where  $k$  is a constant.

$$\frac{1}{\rho} \frac{d\rho}{dt} = \frac{1}{\rho} \frac{d\rho}{d\tau} \frac{d\tau}{dt} = \frac{k}{\rho} \frac{d\tau}{dt}$$

where  $\frac{d\tau}{dt}$  is the

(11)

$$\frac{\left( \frac{1}{\rho} \frac{d\rho}{dt} \right)_{\infty}}{\left( \frac{1}{\rho} \frac{d\rho}{dt} \right)_0} = \frac{\rho_0}{\rho_{\infty}}$$

where  $\left( \frac{1}{\rho} \frac{d\rho}{dt} \right)_{\infty}$  is the limiting value of  $\frac{1}{\rho} \frac{d\rho}{dt}$  as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ , and  $\left( \frac{1}{\rho} \frac{d\rho}{dt} \right)_0$  is the initial value of  $\frac{1}{\rho} \frac{d\rho}{dt}$  at  $t = 0$ . It is assumed that the reaction is of the type  $A + B \rightarrow C + D$ , and a constant rate of reaction is assumed, so that  $\frac{d\rho}{d\tau} = k$ , where  $k$  is a constant.

It is assumed that the reaction is of the type  $A + B \rightarrow C + D$ , and a constant rate of reaction is assumed, so that  $\frac{d\rho}{d\tau} = k$ , where  $k$  is a constant. It is assumed that the reaction is of the type  $A + B \rightarrow C + D$ , and a constant rate of reaction is assumed, so that  $\frac{d\rho}{d\tau} = k$ , where  $k$  is a constant.

It is assumed that the reaction is of the type  $A + B \rightarrow C + D$ , and a constant rate of reaction is assumed, so that  $\frac{d\rho}{d\tau} = k$ , where  $k$  is a constant.

It is assumed that the reaction is of the type  $A + B \rightarrow C + D$ , and a constant rate of reaction is assumed, so that  $\frac{d\rho}{d\tau} = k$ , where  $k$  is a constant.

It is assumed that the reaction is of the type  $A + B \rightarrow C + D$ , and a constant rate of reaction is assumed, so that  $\frac{d\rho}{d\tau} = k$ , where  $k$  is a constant.

ing to Appendix F,  $H'_{ij}$  will appear again as a symmetrically oriented sum, with the linear velocity dependence giving zero to lowest order. We take  $V_1(r_1)$  to be a constant. The Hamiltonian (for lowest order exchange energy) is then

$$H = \sum_i T_1.$$

We arrange these operators as follows:

$$H = T_1 + \sum_{\lambda} \sum_{i=1}^{n_{\lambda}} T_{1,\lambda}. \quad (57)$$

Here,  $\lambda$  includes all of a class of neighbors, like, say, next nearest neighbors of the same spin, which cannot be distinguished within our symmetry of space and spin. We have  $\sum_{\lambda} \sum_{i=1}^{n_{\lambda}} 1 = N - 1$ .

We now set up the energy-density matrix, as in the preceding section

$$E_{ij} = \frac{1}{A_{ij}} \int T_1 + \sum_{\lambda} \sum_{i=1}^{n_{\lambda}} T_{1,\lambda} \begin{vmatrix} \phi_{\eta a}(1') & \phi_{\eta a}(2') & \phi_{\eta a}(3') & \dots \\ \phi_b(1') & \phi_b(2') & \phi_b(3') & \dots \\ \phi_c(1') & \phi_c(2') & \phi_c(3') & \dots \\ - & - & - & \backslash \\ - & - & - & \backslash \\ - & - & - & \backslash \end{vmatrix} \begin{matrix} \text{same, unprime} \end{matrix} \quad (58)$$

$$\sum_{i > j}^N \chi_{1j}(r_{1j}^i) \chi_{1j}(r_{1j}) d\vec{r}_1 \dots d\vec{r}_N.$$

$A_{ij}$  is a normalization integral. Note that a change in  $\eta$  only changes  $\phi_a$ . We are interested in setting up symmetrized states between 1 and

Let  $f$  be a function defined on the interval  $[a, b]$ . The function  $f$  is said to be continuous at a point  $c$  in  $[a, b]$  if for every  $\epsilon > 0$  there exists a  $\delta > 0$  such that for all  $x$  in  $[a, b]$  with  $|x - c| < \delta$ , we have  $|f(x) - f(c)| < \epsilon$ . If  $f$  is continuous at every point in  $[a, b]$ , then  $f$  is said to be continuous on  $[a, b]$ .

$$f(x) = x^2$$

Example: Let  $f(x) = x^2$ . We will show that  $f$  is continuous at  $c = 1$ .

$$\text{We want to show that for every } \epsilon > 0, \text{ there exists a } \delta > 0 \text{ such that for all } x \text{ in } [a, b] \text{ with } |x - 1| < \delta, \text{ we have } |f(x) - f(1)| < \epsilon.$$

Let  $\epsilon > 0$  be given. We want to find a  $\delta > 0$  such that for all  $x$  in  $[a, b]$  with  $|x - 1| < \delta$ , we have  $|x^2 - 1| < \epsilon$ . Note that  $|x^2 - 1| = |x - 1||x + 1|$ .

$$|x^2 - 1| = |x - 1||x + 1| < \delta |x + 1|.$$

Since  $x$  is in  $[a, b]$ ,  $|x + 1|$  is bounded. Let  $M = \max_{x \in [a, b]} |x + 1|$ . Then  $|x^2 - 1| < \delta M$ .

Choose  $\delta = \frac{\epsilon}{M}$ .

$$\begin{vmatrix} f(1) & f'(1) & f''(1) \\ f(2) & f'(2) & f''(2) \\ f(3) & f'(3) & f''(3) \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 2 & 2 \\ 4 & 4 & 4 \\ 9 & 6 & 6 \end{vmatrix} = 1(4 \cdot 6 - 6 \cdot 4) - 2(4 \cdot 6 - 6 \cdot 9) + 2(4 \cdot 6 - 6 \cdot 9) = 0.$$

$$f(x) = x^2, f'(x) = 2x, f''(x) = 2.$$

$$\text{Theorem: Let } f \text{ be a function defined on the interval } [a, b]. \text{ If } f \text{ is continuous on } [a, b] \text{ and differentiable on } (a, b), \text{ then } f \text{ is differentiable at } c \text{ in } (a, b) \text{ if and only if } f'(c) \text{ exists.}$$

Example: Let  $f(x) = x^2$ . We will show that  $f$  is differentiable at  $c = 1$ . We want to show that  $\lim_{x \rightarrow 1} \frac{f(x) - f(1)}{x - 1} = 2$ . Note that  $\frac{f(x) - f(1)}{x - 1} = \frac{x^2 - 1}{x - 1} = x + 1$ .



all the other particles. We have no interest in the symmetry of, say, 2 and 3 as a pair, since we do not propose to disturb their symmetry.

We use a form for  $\phi_1$  here which has a natural symmetry for exchange:

$$\phi_1(t) \rightarrow C_{1jk} \cos\left(\frac{\pi x_t}{n_1 a}\right) \cos\left(\frac{\pi y_t}{n_1 a}\right) \cos\left(\frac{\pi z_t}{n_1 a}\right); \quad (59)$$

each wave has a phase to give the greatest symmetry, with no nodes at lattice points. Equation (59) is written for a simple cubic lattice. For other lattices, similar functions can be constructed. For example, in a NaCl type lattice, where the  $k$  represents one spin system and  $Cl$  the other, we would have two sets of equation (59), each with  $N/2$  members, and each with  $a \rightarrow (2/\sqrt{3})a$ , the length of the cube edge.

We can rewrite (58), using a Slater determinant which contains only information about the pairs  $1 - n$  in antisymmetric states, but which contains no terms giving antisymmetry to the pairs  $j - n$ , ( $j \neq n$ ,  $n \neq 1$ ). In rewriting (58) we must include the other atoms in a form adequate to construct the contribution to the probability density of the solid from the pairs  $j - n$ . We can do this by including them as  $\sum_j |\phi_j(k)|^2$  ( $j \neq 1$ ). We can use the Slater determinant format, putting zero for all the terms not involving overlap with atom 1. For example, for three particles,

$$P = \begin{vmatrix} \phi_a^*(1) & \phi_a^*(2) & \phi_a^*(3) \\ \phi_b^*(1) & \phi_b^*(2) & 0 \\ \phi_c^*(1) & 0 & \phi_c^*(3) \end{vmatrix} \begin{vmatrix} a(1) & b(1) & c(1) \\ a(2) & b(2) & 0 \\ a(3) & 0 & c(3) \end{vmatrix} \\ = A^+ - B^+ - C^+)(A - B - C),$$





where

$$A = \phi_a(1) \phi_b(2) \phi_c(3)$$

$$B = \phi_a(2) \phi_b(1) \phi_c(3)$$

$$C = \phi_a(3) \phi_b(2) \phi_c(1).$$

If we adopt the convention that we drop terms showing overlap of three atoms, the product simplifies to

$$\begin{aligned} & A^+ A + B^+ B + C^+ C - A^+ B - A^+ C - B^+ A - C^+ A \\ &= \left[ \sum_P \rho_P |\phi_a(1)|^2 |\phi_b(2)| |\phi_c(3)|^2 \right] \\ &= (\phi_c^*(3) \phi_c(3) [\phi_a^+(1) \phi_b^+(2) \phi_a(2) \phi_b(1) \\ &+ \phi_a^+(2) \phi_b^+(1) \phi_a(1) \phi_b(2)] + (\text{same}, 2 \rightarrow 3, 3 \rightarrow 2)). \end{aligned}$$

Hence, we can use the determinant  $P$  to consider exchange of 1 and 2, or 1 and 3, but not 2 and 3, nor exchange involving three atoms.

We, therefore, write

$$E_\eta = \frac{1}{A_\eta} \int \left[ T_1 + \sum_{\lambda=1}^N \sum_{i=1}^3 T_{1,\lambda} \right]$$

$$\begin{vmatrix} \phi_{a_1}(1') & \phi_{a_1}(2') & \phi_{a_1}(3') & \phi_{a_1}(4') & \cdots \\ \phi_b(1') & \phi_b(2') & 0 & 0 & \cdots \\ \phi_c(1') & 0 & \phi_c(3') & 0 & \cdots \\ \phi_d(1') & 0 & 0 & \phi_d(4') & \cdots \\ \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \ddots \end{vmatrix}$$

$$| \text{same, prime} \rightarrow \text{unprime} |_{i > j} \prod_{i > j} x_{1j}(x'_{1j}) x_{2j}(x_{1j}) d\vec{x}_1 \cdots d\vec{x}_N. \quad (60)$$

$$121f(10)f(11)f(12) = 0, \dots$$

$$111f(11)f(12)f(13) = 0$$

$$111f(10)f(11)f(12) = 0$$

... and so on, ...

$$f(1) = f(2) = f(3) = f(4) = f(5) = f(6) = f(7) = f(8) = f(9) = f(10) = f(11) = f(12) = 0$$

$$\left[ \begin{matrix} f(1)f(2) & f(1)f(3) & f(1)f(4) & f(1)f(5) \\ f(2)f(1) & f(2)f(3) & f(2)f(4) & f(2)f(5) \\ f(3)f(1) & f(3)f(2) & f(3)f(4) & f(3)f(5) \\ f(4)f(1) & f(4)f(2) & f(4)f(3) & f(4)f(5) \end{matrix} \right] =$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= 0 \quad \text{and} \quad f(1)f(2)f(3)f(4)f(5) = 0$$

... and so on, ...

... and so on, ...

$$\begin{bmatrix} f(1)f(2)f(3)f(4)f(5) \\ f(1)f(2)f(3)f(4)f(6) \\ f(1)f(2)f(3)f(4)f(7) \\ f(1)f(2)f(3)f(4)f(8) \\ f(1)f(2)f(3)f(4)f(9) \\ f(1)f(2)f(3)f(4)f(10) \\ f(1)f(2)f(3)f(4)f(11) \\ f(1)f(2)f(3)f(4)f(12) \end{bmatrix} =$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

... and so on, ...

If we understand that we include overlap between 1 and only one other atom at a time, for each member of the class  $\lambda$  of indistinguishable members, (60) gives the same result. Using one of the matrix elements out of  $\lambda$  to represent all in  $\lambda$ , we get

$$E_{\eta_1} = \int \frac{T_1}{\Lambda_1} + \sum_{\lambda} n_{\lambda} \frac{E_{\lambda}}{\Lambda_{\lambda}}$$

$\phi_{\eta a}(1')$	$\phi_{\eta a}(2')$	$\phi_{\eta a}(3')$	$\phi_{\eta a}(4')$	--
$\phi_{b,\lambda=1}(1')$	$\phi_{b,\lambda=1}(2')$	0	0	--
$\phi_{c,\lambda=2}(1')$	0	$\phi_{c,\lambda=2}(3')$	0	--
$\phi_{d,\lambda=3}(1')$	0	0	$\phi_{d,\lambda=3}(4')$	
⋮	⋮	⋮	⋮	⋮

$$| \text{same, prime} \rightarrow \text{unprime} | \prod_{1 > j} x_{1j}(r'_{1j}) x_{1j}(r_{1j}) d\vec{x}_1 \dots d\vec{x}_N. \quad (61)$$

We calculate the average value of the operators using a different function for each, hence we have a different normalizing constant for each.

We see that  $T_1$  is going to contribute  $\langle T_1 \rangle$  to the sum, the value obtained for the direct energy. We can evaluate (61) for any value of  $\lambda$  formally, and obtain a formula. We can apply the formula, once for each  $\lambda$ , adding the results to get the total energy change in changing the spin orientation of 1.

$$E_{\eta,\lambda} - \langle T_1 \rangle = \frac{1}{\Lambda_{\eta,\lambda}} \int d\vec{x}_{\lambda} \mathcal{E}_{\lambda} \left| \begin{array}{cc} \phi_{\eta a}(1') & \phi_{\eta a}(\lambda') \\ \phi_{\lambda}(1') & \phi_{\lambda}(\lambda') \end{array} \right| \left| \text{same, prime} \rightarrow \text{unprime} \right|$$

$$\left[ \frac{\sum P_0}{P} \prod_{1 \neq a, \lambda, 1, \lambda} \phi_{\lambda}^2(1) \right] \prod_{1 > j, 1, j \neq \lambda, 1} x_{1j}^2(r_{1j}) \prod_k x_{1k}(r_{1k}) x_{1k}(r_{1k}) x_{\lambda k}(r_{\lambda k}) x_{\lambda k}(r_{\lambda k})$$

$$d\vec{x}_{\lambda} \quad (62)$$



... ..  
 ... ..  
 ... ..  
 ... ..

...	...	...	...
...	...	...	...
...	...	...	...
...	...	...	...

$$x = \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{2}i$$

( ... .. )

... ..  
 ... ..  
 ... ..  
 ... ..  
 ... ..  
 ... ..

$$\left| \begin{matrix} \dots & \dots \\ \dots & \dots \end{matrix} \right|$$

$$\left[ \dots \right]$$



In (62), we have used only that part of the determinant which describes the symmetrized wave function of the pair  $(1\lambda)$ .

We now adopt the convention that the index identifying the spin of  $a$ ,  $\eta$ , is plus one for the spin of  $a$  opposite to  $\Lambda$ , and minus one for the spin of  $a$  parallel to  $\Lambda$ . Then, the expression

$$[\phi_a(1) \phi_\Lambda(\lambda) + \eta \phi_a(\lambda) \phi_\Lambda(1)] \quad (63)$$

is antisymmetric in interchange of  $1$  and  $\lambda$ , and the Pauli principle is obeyed if we use (63) in conjunction with any symmetric function of  $1$  and  $\lambda$ .

We can rewrite (62), representing all atoms, except  $1$  and  $\lambda$ , by a single-particle density, as we did in (18) and (45):

$$\begin{aligned} E_{\eta,\lambda} - T_1 &= \frac{n_\lambda}{A_{\eta,\lambda}} \left( -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \right) \int [\phi_a^*(1) \phi_\Lambda^*(\lambda) + \eta \phi_a^*(\lambda) \phi_\Lambda^*(1)] \chi^2(r_{1\lambda}) \\ &\quad \nabla_\lambda^2 \{ [\phi_a(1) \phi_\Lambda(\lambda) + \eta \phi_a(\lambda) \phi_\Lambda(1)] \prod_{k \neq 1,\lambda} \int r_k(k) \chi_{1k}^2(r_{1k}) \\ &\quad \times \chi_{\lambda k}(r'_{\lambda k}) \chi_{\lambda k}(r_{\lambda k}) d\vec{r}_k \}, \end{aligned} \quad (64)$$

with

$$J_\lambda = 2[E_{1,\lambda} - E_{-1,\lambda}]. \quad (65)$$

The factor 2 in (65) arises because of the convention that the exchange energy is the difference in energy for two particles upon exchange, whereas (64) gives the difference for one particle. Formula (64) is the result we would have obtained if we had assumed that if atom 1 and atom 2 give an exchange energy  $J_{12}$ , then the total exchange energy for all

... (100) ...  
... (101) ...  
... (102) ...  
... (103) ...  
... (104) ...  
... (105) ...

... (106) ...  
... (107) ...  
... (108) ...  
... (109) ...  
... (110) ...  
... (111) ...  
... (112) ...  
... (113) ...  
... (114) ...  
... (115) ...  
... (116) ...  
... (117) ...  
... (118) ...  
... (119) ...  
... (120) ...

$$f(x) = \frac{1}{2} (f(x) + f(x)) = \frac{1}{2} (f(x) + f(x))$$

$$f(x) = \frac{1}{2} (f(x) + f(x)) = \frac{1}{2} (f(x) + f(x))$$

... (121) ...  
... (122) ...  
... (123) ...  
... (124) ...  
... (125) ...  
... (126) ...  
... (127) ...  
... (128) ...  
... (129) ...  
... (130) ...  
... (131) ...  
... (132) ...  
... (133) ...  
... (134) ...  
... (135) ...  
... (136) ...  
... (137) ...  
... (138) ...  
... (139) ...  
... (140) ...  
... (141) ...  
... (142) ...  
... (143) ...  
... (144) ...  
... (145) ...  
... (146) ...  
... (147) ...  
... (148) ...  
... (149) ...  
... (150) ...  
... (151) ...  
... (152) ...  
... (153) ...  
... (154) ...  
... (155) ...  
... (156) ...  
... (157) ...  
... (158) ...  
... (159) ...  
... (160) ...  
... (161) ...  
... (162) ...  
... (163) ...  
... (164) ...  
... (165) ...  
... (166) ...  
... (167) ...  
... (168) ...  
... (169) ...  
... (170) ...  
... (171) ...  
... (172) ...  
... (173) ...  
... (174) ...  
... (175) ...  
... (176) ...  
... (177) ...  
... (178) ...  
... (179) ...  
... (180) ...  
... (181) ...  
... (182) ...  
... (183) ...  
... (184) ...  
... (185) ...  
... (186) ...  
... (187) ...  
... (188) ...  
... (189) ...  
... (190) ...  
... (191) ...  
... (192) ...  
... (193) ...  
... (194) ...  
... (195) ...  
... (196) ...  
... (197) ...  
... (198) ...  
... (199) ...  
... (200) ...

... (201) ...  
... (202) ...  
... (203) ...  
... (204) ...  
... (205) ...  
... (206) ...  
... (207) ...  
... (208) ...  
... (209) ...  
... (210) ...  
... (211) ...  
... (212) ...  
... (213) ...  
... (214) ...  
... (215) ...  
... (216) ...  
... (217) ...  
... (218) ...  
... (219) ...  
... (220) ...  
... (221) ...  
... (222) ...  
... (223) ...  
... (224) ...  
... (225) ...  
... (226) ...  
... (227) ...  
... (228) ...  
... (229) ...  
... (230) ...  
... (231) ...  
... (232) ...  
... (233) ...  
... (234) ...  
... (235) ...  
... (236) ...  
... (237) ...  
... (238) ...  
... (239) ...  
... (240) ...  
... (241) ...  
... (242) ...  
... (243) ...  
... (244) ...  
... (245) ...  
... (246) ...  
... (247) ...  
... (248) ...  
... (249) ...  
... (250) ...  
... (251) ...  
... (252) ...  
... (253) ...  
... (254) ...  
... (255) ...  
... (256) ...  
... (257) ...  
... (258) ...  
... (259) ...  
... (260) ...  
... (261) ...  
... (262) ...  
... (263) ...  
... (264) ...  
... (265) ...  
... (266) ...  
... (267) ...  
... (268) ...  
... (269) ...  
... (270) ...  
... (271) ...  
... (272) ...  
... (273) ...  
... (274) ...  
... (275) ...  
... (276) ...  
... (277) ...  
... (278) ...  
... (279) ...  
... (280) ...  
... (281) ...  
... (282) ...  
... (283) ...  
... (284) ...  
... (285) ...  
... (286) ...  
... (287) ...  
... (288) ...  
... (289) ...  
... (290) ...  
... (291) ...  
... (292) ...  
... (293) ...  
... (294) ...  
... (295) ...  
... (296) ...  
... (297) ...  
... (298) ...  
... (299) ...  
... (300) ...

neighbors of type 2 is  $n_2 J_{12}$ , where  $n_2$  is the number of type 2 atoms. However, under this simple assumption, the question arises: how can we include the kinetic energy of atom 1 simultaneously in all the pairs? The derivation (64) answers this question by showing us that the kinetic energy of atom 1 does not affect exchange at all.

The evaluation of (64) is a major task. We can use harmonic oscillator wave functions for the  $\phi$ 's. They will include the cut-off effect of the product over  $k$  at large distances from the pair ( $1\lambda$ ), and will permit the symmetry to be affected by  $\eta$ , if we take one of the states, say  $\Lambda$ , to be the first excited state, and the other, say  $\phi_\Lambda$ , to be the ground state, in a variable describing the degree of freedom along the line joining the lattice sites of the pair. The function  $\chi^2$  can be represented as  $\chi^2 = (1 - A e^{-b^2 r_{1\lambda}^2})$ ,  $A = 1.94$ ,  $b = 0.0944/\Lambda^2$ . If we handle  $\phi$  and  $\chi^2$  in the way described, they yield elementary Gaussian integrals (with complications introduced by the cut off in  $\chi^2$ ). Introducing the behavior of the product over  $k$  in the region between the lattice sites introduces a crucial problem, in itself worthy of a separate study.

Instead, we calculate an approximate  $J$ , valid at low densities, using the single-particle density matrix.

We learned in the last section that we could get  $\langle T \rangle$  by putting  $r(1'/1) = \sqrt{r(1') r(1)}$  (provided only that  $\sqrt{1 + O(e^{-\delta^2(u-r_0)/\delta u})}$  was small). We shall use this idea to reduce the density matrix in (64) to the single particle form. We can interpret the wave function





$[\phi_a(1) \phi_\lambda(\lambda)] \chi_{1\lambda}(r_{1\lambda}) \sqrt{\frac{1}{\pi} \int \gamma(k) \chi^2(1k) \chi^2(\lambda k) d\vec{k}}$  to be the amplitude

for particle 1 to be near lattice site  $a$  with particle  $\lambda$  near lattice site  $\lambda$ . This is because (a) the product over  $k$  keeps the particles near these two lattice sites, and (b)  $\chi(r_{1\lambda})$  prevents them from being on the same lattice site. We recall that a representation for  $\gamma(1)$  was  $\sum_j e^{-\delta^2(\vec{R}_j - \vec{r}_1)^2}$ . We want to build up a non-diagonal two-particle density

matrix from this representation, and still have a result which shows the necessary conditions:

$$r(1'2'|12) = r(2'1'|21) = -r(1'2'|21)$$

$$r(12|12) = r(1) r(2). \quad (66)$$

We recall that we had

$$r(1) = \sum_j r_j(1)$$

$$r_j(1) = (\text{const}) e^{-\delta^2(\vec{R}_j - \vec{r}_1)^2}.$$

The antisymmetric form of the density matrix which we seek is:

$$r^{(2)} = (\sqrt{r_a(1') r_b(2')} + \eta \sqrt{r_b(1') r_a(2')})$$

$$\begin{aligned} & (\sqrt{r_a(1) r_b(2)} + \eta \sqrt{r_a(2) r_b(1)}) \\ & = (\text{const}) \left[ e^{-\frac{\delta^2}{2} [(\vec{R}_a - \vec{r}_1')^2 + (\vec{R}_b - \vec{r}_2')^2]} + \right. \end{aligned}$$



Let  $\mathcal{H}$  be a Hilbert space and let  $\mathcal{H}_1, \mathcal{H}_2$  be subspaces of  $\mathcal{H}$ .

Let  $\mathcal{H}_1 \perp \mathcal{H}_2$  and let  $\mathcal{H}_1 \oplus \mathcal{H}_2 = \mathcal{H}$ .

Let  $\mathcal{H}_1 = \{x \in \mathcal{H} : x = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \alpha_i e_i, \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} |\alpha_i|^2 < \infty\}$ .

Let  $\mathcal{H}_2 = \{x \in \mathcal{H} : x = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \beta_i f_i, \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} |\beta_i|^2 < \infty\}$ .

Let  $\mathcal{H}_1 \perp \mathcal{H}_2$  and let  $\mathcal{H}_1 \oplus \mathcal{H}_2 = \mathcal{H}$ .

$$\mathcal{H}_1 \perp \mathcal{H}_2$$

Let  $\mathcal{H}_1 \perp \mathcal{H}_2$  and let  $\mathcal{H}_1 \oplus \mathcal{H}_2 = \mathcal{H}$ .

Let  $\mathcal{H}_1 \perp \mathcal{H}_2$  and let  $\mathcal{H}_1 \oplus \mathcal{H}_2 = \mathcal{H}$ .

Let  $\mathcal{H}_1 \perp \mathcal{H}_2$  and let  $\mathcal{H}_1 \oplus \mathcal{H}_2 = \mathcal{H}$ .

$$\mathcal{H}_1 \perp \mathcal{H}_2 \text{ and } \mathcal{H}_1 \oplus \mathcal{H}_2 = \mathcal{H}$$

$$\mathcal{H}_1 \perp \mathcal{H}_2 \text{ and } \mathcal{H}_1 \oplus \mathcal{H}_2 = \mathcal{H}$$

Let  $\mathcal{H}_1 \perp \mathcal{H}_2$  and let  $\mathcal{H}_1 \oplus \mathcal{H}_2 = \mathcal{H}$ .

$$\mathcal{H}_1 \perp \mathcal{H}_2 \text{ and } \mathcal{H}_1 \oplus \mathcal{H}_2 = \mathcal{H}$$

$$\mathcal{H}_1 \perp \mathcal{H}_2 \text{ and } \mathcal{H}_1 \oplus \mathcal{H}_2 = \mathcal{H}$$

Let  $\mathcal{H}_1 \perp \mathcal{H}_2$  and let  $\mathcal{H}_1 \oplus \mathcal{H}_2 = \mathcal{H}$ .

$$\mathcal{H}_1 \perp \mathcal{H}_2 \text{ and } \mathcal{H}_1 \oplus \mathcal{H}_2 = \mathcal{H}$$

$$\mathcal{H}_1 \perp \mathcal{H}_2 \text{ and } \mathcal{H}_1 \oplus \mathcal{H}_2 = \mathcal{H}$$

$$\mathcal{H}_1 \perp \mathcal{H}_2 \text{ and } \mathcal{H}_1 \oplus \mathcal{H}_2 = \mathcal{H}$$

$$+ \eta e^{-\frac{\delta^2}{2} [(\vec{R}_a - \frac{\vec{r}}{2})^2 + (\vec{R}_b - \frac{\vec{r}}{2})^2]} \quad [\text{same, prime} \rightarrow \text{unprime}]. \quad (67)$$

Formula (67) yields the conditions (66), and gives the correct single-particle effects. Formula (67) would over-estimate the energy if we were to use  $-\hbar^2/(2m) \nabla_1^2$  for the energy operator, in the same way as in Eq. (51). We must introduce the same factor of  $1/3$  here.

We shall use the form in (67) as a first approximation valid only so long as the spherically symmetric approximation has little effect on overlap of adjacent  $r$ 's. The spherically symmetric approximation is poor at small atomic separations, so our results can be expected to have validity only at lower densities.

We can rewrite (67) as  $r^{(2)} = |\psi|^2$ ,

$$\psi = \left( e^{-\frac{\delta^2}{2} [(z_1-b)^2 + (z_2-b)^2]} + \eta e^{-\frac{\delta^2}{2} [(z_1+b)^2 + (z_2-b)^2]} \right) e^{-\frac{\delta^2}{2} [x_1^2 + y_1^2 + x_2^2 + y_2^2]}. \quad (68)$$

Here  $b = a/2$ . The  $z$  axis joins the two lattice sites 1 and 2, and  $z_1$  and  $z_2$  are measured from the midpoint of the line joining the lattice sites (that is, there are lattice sites at  $z = \pm b = \pm a/2$ ).

Identifying 2 with  $\lambda$  in (64), and writing the second-order density matrix there in the form (64), we get

$$E_{\eta,2} = \int \psi^* \left( -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \right) \frac{\nabla^2}{3} \psi \, dv_1 \, dv_2$$

and

THE JOURNAL OF THE

$$\left| \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial y^2} \right| \leq \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial y^2} \right)$$

Let  $f$  be a function defined on a domain  $D$  in the plane. Suppose that  $f$  is harmonic in  $D$ , i.e.,  $\Delta f = 0$ . Let  $\gamma$  be a closed curve in  $D$ , and let  $\Omega$  be the region bounded by  $\gamma$ . Then, by Green's theorem, we have

$$\int_{\gamma} \left( \frac{\partial f}{\partial n} - \frac{\partial f}{\partial \tau} \right) ds = 0$$

where  $\frac{\partial f}{\partial n}$  and  $\frac{\partial f}{\partial \tau}$  are the normal and tangential derivatives of  $f$  along  $\gamma$ , respectively. If  $\gamma$  is a circle of radius  $r$  centered at the origin, then the above equation becomes

$$\int_0^{2\pi} \left( \frac{\partial f}{\partial r} - \frac{1}{r} \frac{\partial f}{\partial \theta} \right) r d\theta = 0$$

which simplifies to

$$\int_0^{2\pi} \left( \frac{\partial f}{\partial r} - \frac{1}{r} \frac{\partial f}{\partial \theta} \right) d\theta = 0$$

Since  $f$  is harmonic, we can expand it in a Fourier series in  $\theta$ . Let

$$f(r, \theta) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \left( a_n r^n \cos n\theta + b_n r^n \sin n\theta \right)$$

Then, the above equation becomes

$$\int_0^{2\pi} \left( \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} n a_n r^{n-1} \cos n\theta - \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n b_n r^{n-1} \sin n\theta \right) d\theta = 0$$

Since the integral of a function over a full period is zero, we must have

$$a_n = b_n = 0 \quad \text{for } n \geq 1$$

Therefore,  $f$  is a constant function.

$$f(x) = \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial y^2} \right)$$

$$\left( \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial y^2} \right) = \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial y^2} \right)$$

$$\frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial y^2} = \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial y^2} \right)$$

(12)

Let  $f$  be a function defined on a domain  $D$  in the plane. Suppose that  $f$  is harmonic in  $D$ , i.e.,  $\Delta f = 0$ . Let  $\gamma$  be a closed curve in  $D$ , and let  $\Omega$  be the region bounded by  $\gamma$ . Then, by Green's theorem, we have

$$\int_{\gamma} \left( \frac{\partial f}{\partial n} - \frac{\partial f}{\partial \tau} \right) ds = 0$$

where  $\frac{\partial f}{\partial n}$  and  $\frac{\partial f}{\partial \tau}$  are the normal and tangential derivatives of  $f$  along  $\gamma$ , respectively. If  $\gamma$  is a circle of radius  $r$  centered at the origin, then the above equation becomes

$$\int_0^{2\pi} \left( \frac{\partial f}{\partial r} - \frac{1}{r} \frac{\partial f}{\partial \theta} \right) r d\theta = 0$$

which simplifies to

$$\int_0^{2\pi} \left( \frac{\partial f}{\partial r} - \frac{1}{r} \frac{\partial f}{\partial \theta} \right) d\theta = 0$$

Since  $f$  is harmonic, we can expand it in a Fourier series in  $\theta$ . Let

$$f(r, \theta) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \left( a_n r^n \cos n\theta + b_n r^n \sin n\theta \right)$$

Then, the above equation becomes

$$\int_0^{2\pi} \left( \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} n a_n r^{n-1} \cos n\theta - \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n b_n r^{n-1} \sin n\theta \right) d\theta = 0$$

Since the integral of a function over a full period is zero, we must have

$$a_n = b_n = 0 \quad \text{for } n \geq 1$$

Therefore,  $f$  is a constant function.

$$\frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial y^2} = \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial y^2} \right)$$

$$A_{\eta 2} = \int \psi^* \psi \, dv_1 \, dv_2 = 1.$$

We get, performing the operations:

$$\frac{E}{I} = \frac{n^2}{3 \cdot 2\pi} \frac{1}{2} \frac{b^2 - \eta [2b^4 b^2 - b^2] e^{-b^2 b^2} (2)}{(1 + \eta e^{-b^2 2b^2})}$$

Hence, in Eq. (56), we have

$$\epsilon = \frac{-1 n^2}{3 \cdot 2 \cdot 2\pi} [2b^4 b^2 - b^2] e^{-b^2 b^2} 2$$

$$\Delta = e^{-b^2 2b^2}$$

$$\langle E \rangle = \frac{1}{2 \cdot 3} b^2 \frac{n^2}{2\pi}$$

$$\langle 1 \rangle = 1.$$

We use Eq. (56), but include the factor 2 from (65):

$$J = \frac{2 \times 2 (\epsilon - \Delta \frac{\langle E \rangle}{\langle 1 \rangle})}{\langle 1 \rangle - \frac{\Delta^2}{\langle 1 \rangle}}.$$

Neglecting  $\Delta^2 / \langle 1 \rangle$  compared to  $\langle 1 \rangle$ , we have

$$J = -\frac{n^2}{n^3} [2b^4 b^2 - b^2 + b^2] e^{-b^2 2b^2}$$

$$J = -\frac{n^2}{3\pi} b^2 \frac{b^2 a^2}{2} e^{-\frac{b^2 a^2}{2}} \quad (69)$$

Equation (69) cannot be expected to be valid in the high density case, since the overlap of the functions  $\gamma(k)$  enters strongly in (69).

$$f(x) = x^2 + 2x + 1$$

$$\frac{f(x) - f(x_0)}{x - x_0} = \frac{x^2 + 2x + 1 - (x_0^2 + 2x_0 + 1)}{x - x_0} = \frac{x^2 - x_0^2 + 2x - 2x_0}{x - x_0} = \frac{(x - x_0)(x + x_0) + 2(x - x_0)}{x - x_0} = x + x_0 + 2$$

$$f(x) = x^2 + 2x + 1$$

$$f'(x) = 2x + 2$$

$$f'(1) = 4$$

(20) auch durch die Ableitung von  $f(x) = x^2 + 2x + 1$  ergibt sich

$$\frac{f(x) - f(x_0)}{x - x_0} = \frac{x^2 + 2x + 1 - (x_0^2 + 2x_0 + 1)}{x - x_0} = \frac{x^2 - x_0^2 + 2x - 2x_0}{x - x_0} = \frac{(x - x_0)(x + x_0) + 2(x - x_0)}{x - x_0} = x + x_0 + 2$$

mit  $x = 1$  ergibt sich  $f'(1) = 4$ .

$$f(x) = x^2 + 2x + 1$$

$$f'(x) = 2x + 2$$

mit

erhält man die Ableitung von  $f(x) = x^2 + 2x + 1$  an der Stelle  $x = 1$ .

Die Ableitung von  $f(x) = x^2 + 2x + 1$  an der Stelle  $x = 1$  ist  $f'(1) = 4$ .



A better approximation would consist of using less than spherical symmetry in  $r_1(1)$ , for example,

$$r_1(1) = e^{-\delta_1^2[(x^2 + y^2 + z^2) + \delta_2^2(xy^2 + y^2z^2 + x^2z^2)]}.$$

However, if we anticipate that these corrections to the exchange integral are of the same sign as (6), then (6) gives a lower limit on J.

Assume that the group  $G$  is a finite group of order  $n$ .

Consider the set  $\{g \in G : g^2 = 1\}$ .

$$| \{g \in G : g^2 = 1\} | = \sum_{g \in G} \frac{1}{2} (1 + \chi(g)) = \frac{1}{2} (n + \sum_{g \in G} \chi(g)) = \frac{1}{2} (n + 0) = \frac{n}{2}.$$

Therefore, the number of elements  $g$  in  $G$  such that  $g^2 = 1$  is  $\frac{n}{2}$ .

So, if  $n$  is odd, then  $\frac{n}{2}$  is not an integer, which is a contradiction.

Therefore,  $n$  must be even.

## CHAPTER V

### COMPARISON WITH EXPERIMENT

#### Elastic Effects

In Chapter IV, we have obtained an expression for the cohesive energy of solid  $\text{He}^3$  in the body-centered cubic phase:

$$E = - \frac{\hbar^2}{4m} \delta_0^2, \quad (1)$$

with

$$\delta_0^2 = 1.17 + 4.8(a - 4.052)^2 \text{ \AA}^{-2}. \quad (2)$$

The expression for  $\delta_0^2$  is obtained by constructing the ground-state wave function for the given lattice structure from the correlation function  $R(r) = F_0(c/r)$ , calculating  $\delta_0^2$  for various  $a$ , and then fitting a curve to a quadratic equation in  $a$ .

Formula (1) gives the cohesive energy directly.

Goodkind and Fairbank,<sup>1</sup> and Reich<sup>2</sup> have observed the temperature dependence of the nuclear resonance relaxation times. They use the Bloembergen, Purcell and Pound<sup>3</sup> theory of the diffusion relaxation mech-

---

<sup>1</sup>J. M. Goodkind and W. M. Fairbank, Helium Three (Edited by J. G. Daunt, Ohio State University Press, Columbus, Ohio, 1960) p. 52.

<sup>2</sup>H. A. Reich, Helium Three (Edited by J. G. Daunt, Ohio State University Press, Columbus, Ohio, 1960) p. 63.

<sup>3</sup>H. Bloembergen, E. Purcell, and R. V. Pound, Phys. Rev. **73**, 67 (1943).

# ORIGINAL ARTICLES

## ARTICLE

THE EFFECT OF THE VARIOUS FACTORS IN THE PRODUCTION OF  
THE ACUTE INFLUENZA VIRUS IN THE RESPIRATORY TRACT  
AND THE EFFECT OF THE VARIOUS FACTORS IN THE PRODUCTION OF  
THE ACUTE INFLUENZA VIRUS IN THE RESPIRATORY TRACT

$$(1) \quad \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{2} \right)^n = \frac{1}{2^{n+1}}$$

111

$$(2) \quad \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{2} \right)^n = \frac{1}{2^{n+1}}$$

THE EFFECT OF THE VARIOUS FACTORS IN THE PRODUCTION OF  
THE ACUTE INFLUENZA VIRUS IN THE RESPIRATORY TRACT  
AND THE EFFECT OF THE VARIOUS FACTORS IN THE PRODUCTION OF  
THE ACUTE INFLUENZA VIRUS IN THE RESPIRATORY TRACT

THE EFFECT OF THE VARIOUS FACTORS IN THE PRODUCTION OF  
THE ACUTE INFLUENZA VIRUS IN THE RESPIRATORY TRACT

THE EFFECT OF THE VARIOUS FACTORS IN THE PRODUCTION OF  
THE ACUTE INFLUENZA VIRUS IN THE RESPIRATORY TRACT

THE EFFECT OF THE VARIOUS FACTORS IN THE PRODUCTION OF  
THE ACUTE INFLUENZA VIRUS IN THE RESPIRATORY TRACT

THE EFFECT OF THE VARIOUS FACTORS IN THE PRODUCTION OF  
THE ACUTE INFLUENZA VIRUS IN THE RESPIRATORY TRACT

THE EFFECT OF THE VARIOUS FACTORS IN THE PRODUCTION OF  
THE ACUTE INFLUENZA VIRUS IN THE RESPIRATORY TRACT

THE EFFECT OF THE VARIOUS FACTORS IN THE PRODUCTION OF  
THE ACUTE INFLUENZA VIRUS IN THE RESPIRATORY TRACT

THE EFFECT OF THE VARIOUS FACTORS IN THE PRODUCTION OF  
THE ACUTE INFLUENZA VIRUS IN THE RESPIRATORY TRACT

anism. The relaxation times follow the Arrhenius law,  $T = T_0 e^{-E_A/kT}$ , where  $E_A$  is the activation energy of diffusion. In Fig. 7, we have plotted the experimental data for the activation energy of diffusion, together with the cohesive energy given by our theory.

To a first approximation, the cohesive energy is the energy to create a vacancy. Once a vacancy exists at low density, little energy is required for the vacancy to move between nearest-neighbor sites, because the next nearest neighbors do not intrude into the space in which diffusion takes place. Hence, the diffusion coefficient (and the relaxation times), should be determined, in the main, by the number of vacancies through the Boltzmann relationship  $N = N_0 \exp(-E_{vac}/kT)$ . Here  $E_{vac}$  is the energy to create a vacancy in a dilute system of vacancies. Then, if  $D \propto N$ ,  $D = D_0 \exp(E_{vac}/kT)$ . The curve indicates general agreement between the diffusion data and our theoretical values of cohesive energy, if we assume that  $E_A \approx E \approx E_{vac}$ . At high densities the diffusion activation energies lie well above our curve, indicating that our mechanism of diffusion should include a density-dependent activation energy. Our theory cannot treat this problem.

We have attempted to predict the transition to a hexagonal close-packed structure at high densities, using our spherically symmetric single-particle density. This is done by calculating the cohesive energy in the two structures, the structure with lowest energy density being the more stable. Our results are equally valid for hexagonal close-packed and face-centered cubic in the spherically symmetric approximation. This is a better approximation for the 48-fold symmetry of the face-centered cubic



The first part of the paper is devoted to the study of the asymptotic behavior of the solutions of the system of equations (1) as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ . It is shown that the solutions of this system tend to zero as  $t \rightarrow \infty$  if and only if the matrix  $A$  is negative definite. The second part of the paper is devoted to the study of the asymptotic behavior of the solutions of the system of equations (2) as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ . It is shown that the solutions of this system tend to zero as  $t \rightarrow \infty$  if and only if the matrix  $A$  is negative definite. The third part of the paper is devoted to the study of the asymptotic behavior of the solutions of the system of equations (3) as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ . It is shown that the solutions of this system tend to zero as  $t \rightarrow \infty$  if and only if the matrix  $A$  is negative definite. The fourth part of the paper is devoted to the study of the asymptotic behavior of the solutions of the system of equations (4) as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ . It is shown that the solutions of this system tend to zero as  $t \rightarrow \infty$  if and only if the matrix  $A$  is negative definite. The fifth part of the paper is devoted to the study of the asymptotic behavior of the solutions of the system of equations (5) as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ . It is shown that the solutions of this system tend to zero as  $t \rightarrow \infty$  if and only if the matrix  $A$  is negative definite. The sixth part of the paper is devoted to the study of the asymptotic behavior of the solutions of the system of equations (6) as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ . It is shown that the solutions of this system tend to zero as  $t \rightarrow \infty$  if and only if the matrix  $A$  is negative definite. The seventh part of the paper is devoted to the study of the asymptotic behavior of the solutions of the system of equations (7) as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ . It is shown that the solutions of this system tend to zero as  $t \rightarrow \infty$  if and only if the matrix  $A$  is negative definite. The eighth part of the paper is devoted to the study of the asymptotic behavior of the solutions of the system of equations (8) as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ . It is shown that the solutions of this system tend to zero as  $t \rightarrow \infty$  if and only if the matrix  $A$  is negative definite. The ninth part of the paper is devoted to the study of the asymptotic behavior of the solutions of the system of equations (9) as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ . It is shown that the solutions of this system tend to zero as  $t \rightarrow \infty$  if and only if the matrix  $A$  is negative definite. The tenth part of the paper is devoted to the study of the asymptotic behavior of the solutions of the system of equations (10) as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ . It is shown that the solutions of this system tend to zero as  $t \rightarrow \infty$  if and only if the matrix  $A$  is negative definite.

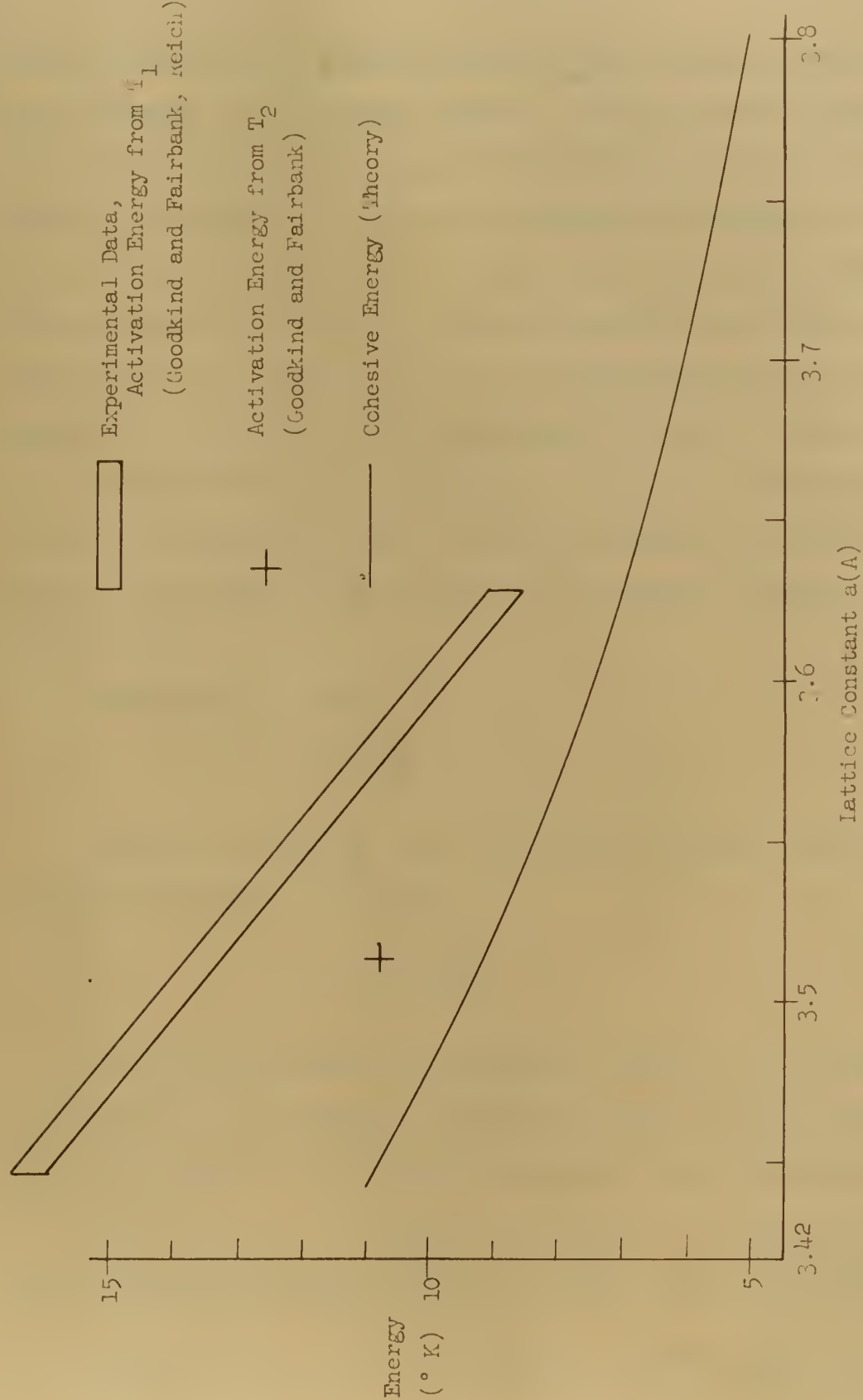


Figure 7. Cohesive Energy and Activation Energy of Nuclear Resonance Relaxation



lattice (with respect to nearest and next nearest neighbor) than for the 6-fold symmetry of the hexagonal lattice. We find the close-packed lattices to be less stable than the body-centered cubic for all densities contrary to experimental findings of a transition to hexagonal close-packed structure at high density. However, the spherically symmetric approximation fails to discriminate between hexagonal close-packed and face-centered cubic lattices, and it is therefore necessary to put the symmetry of the lattice into the single-particle density in order to make a theoretical study of the transition. Because of the expected similarity of close-packed cubic and spherical symmetry, we find the face-centered cubic lattice to be excluded at all densities, compared to body-centered cubic.

The pressure is given by

$$P = - \frac{\partial E}{\partial V}.$$

Hence,  $P = - \frac{\partial E}{\partial a} \frac{da}{dV}$ . But  $V = a^3/1.30$   $\text{\AA}^3/\text{atom}$  for a body-centered cubic lattice. Therefore,

$$P = - \frac{1.3}{3a^2} \frac{\partial E}{\partial a}. \quad (4)$$

In Figure 8 we have plotted pressure, based on (1), (2) and (4). Also plotted are low-temperature experimental points reported by Edwards, Baum, Brewer, Daunt and McWilliams<sup>4</sup> and Sydorak, Mills and Grilly.<sup>5</sup>

---

<sup>4</sup>D. O. Edwards, J. L. Baum, D. F. Brewer, J. G. Daunt, and A. S. McWilliams, Helium Three (Edited by J. G. Daunt, Ohio State University Press, Columbus, Ohio, 1960) p. 128.

<sup>5</sup>G. G. Sydorak, R. L. Mills, and E. R. Grilly, Phys. Rev. Letter **4**, 495 (1960).





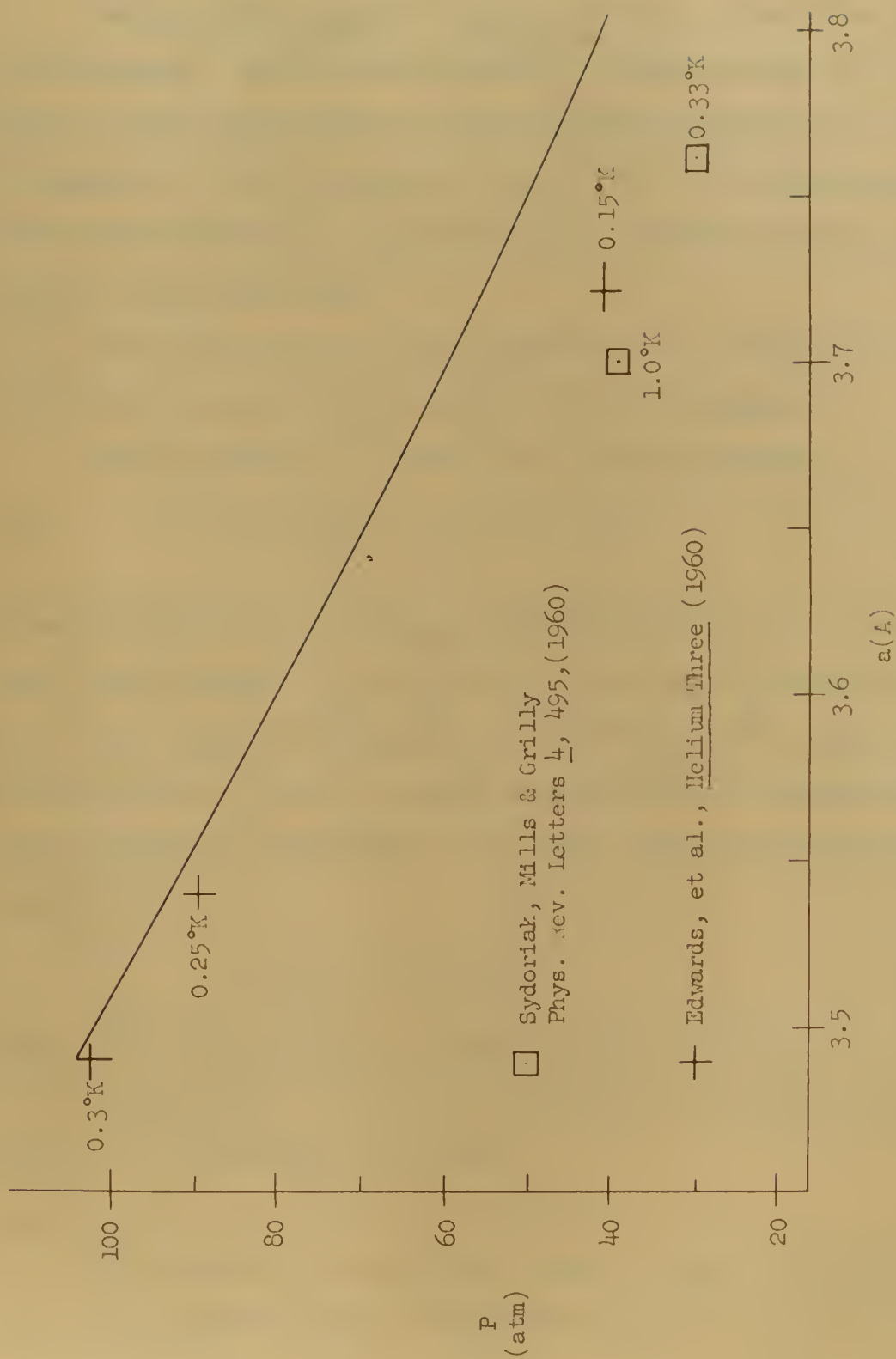


Figure 8. Pressure vs Lattice Constant



Bernardes and Primakoff<sup>6</sup> (B.P.) do not give a theoretical value of the pressure. However, the tabulation of cohesive energy shown in Table II of their paper gives an abrupt change in pressure from positive to negative at a lattice constant of about 3.7 Å, with a negative pressure at high densities. Such behavior is not consistent with the small amount of experimental data.

We can calculate the Debye temperature,  $\theta$ , through the bulk compressibility using an approximation employed by Bernardes.<sup>7</sup>

The bulk modulus is related to the elastic constants

$$\beta = v \frac{dp}{dv} = (c_{11} + 2 c_{12})/3. \quad (5)$$

We cannot determine  $c_{11}$  and  $c_{12}$  separately; however, we can assume that we have isotropy ( $c_{11} - c_{12} = 2 c_{44}$ ), and that the Cauchy relation holds ( $c_{12} = c_{44}$ ). We then have  $c_\beta = c_t/\sqrt{3} = (c_{11}/\rho)^{1/2}$ , where  $\rho$  is the density and  $c_\beta$  and  $c_t$  are the longitudinal and transverse wave sound velocities. We also have  $\beta = 5 c_{11}/9$ . The Debye temperature  $\theta$  is defined by

$$\theta = h c (6 \pi^2 N/v)^{1/3}, \quad (6)$$

where  $3/c^3 = 1/c_\beta^3 + 2/c_t^3$ . One therefore gets  $c = 0.64 c_\beta$ .

We now combine the foregoing assumptions of Bernardes with our value of  $B$  to calculate  $\theta$ . We have

---

<sup>6</sup>H. Bernardes and H. Primakoff, Phys. Rev. 119, 963 (1961).

<sup>7</sup>H. Bernardes, Phys. Rev. 120, 807 (1960).





$$\Theta = h(0.64) \left[ \frac{2 \pi}{5 \rho} \right]^{1/2} \left[ \frac{6 \pi^2 h}{V} \right]^{1/3}$$

But  $\rho = m(1.3/a^3)$ ,  $h/V = 1.3/a^3$ ,  $\Theta = V \frac{1.3}{3a^2} \frac{\partial}{\partial a} \frac{1.3}{3a^2} \frac{\partial}{\partial a}$

$$E = + \frac{a^3}{1.3} \left( \frac{1.3}{3a^2} \right)^2 \left[ \frac{\partial^2 E}{\partial a^2} - \frac{2}{a} \frac{\partial E}{\partial a} \right].$$

Combining, we get

$$\Theta = 4.86 \sqrt{-\frac{2}{a} \frac{\partial E}{\partial a} + \frac{\partial^2 E}{\partial a^2}} \quad ^\circ K \text{ (a in } \text{\AA}). \quad (7)$$

Since  $E = 0.99 + 4.22(a - 4.064)^2 \frac{\pi^2}{4a} \text{\AA}^{-2}$

$$\Theta = 4.86 \sqrt{4.22 \left[ a - \frac{1}{a} (a - 4.064) \right] 2 \cdot 4}$$

$$\Theta = \frac{27.0}{\sqrt{a}} \quad ^\circ K \text{ (a in } \text{\AA}). \quad (8)$$

There are no experimental data giving the specific heat. However, near the melting curve, we predict a Debye temperature of  $29.2^\circ K$ , under the assumptions concerning the transverse modes which we described above.

We can also check our results with the findings of Dugdale and MacDonald,<sup>8</sup> that the Lindemann melting formula gives the same value  $\Lambda$  for all inert gases

$$\Lambda = \frac{h \Theta^2 V_0^{2/3}}{E_0} = 1.14 \times 10^3 \quad (9)$$

---

<sup>8</sup>J. S. Dugdale and D. K. C. MacDonald, Phil. Mag. 47, 811 (1954) (footnote 4, Chapter II).



$M$  = molar mass, grams/mole

$V_0$  = molar volume,  $\text{cm}^3/\text{mole}$

$E_0$  = molar energy, cal/mole

$\theta$  = Debye temperature,  $^\circ \text{K}$ .

We can calculate a value of  $A$  for very low temperatures. We take  $a = 3.8 \text{ \AA}$ . Using our value of  $E$  and  $\theta$  for  $a = 3.8 \text{ \AA}$ , we obtain

$$A = 2.8 \times 10^3.$$

This value is about twice that for other rare-gas solids. However, a factor of 1.4 in  $\theta$  could cause the discrepancy. Further,  $\text{He}^3$  has extreme quantum effects, and (9) may not hold.

### Exchange Effects

In Chapter IV we have obtained an expression for the exchange energy of solid  $\text{He}^3$  in the body-centered cubic configuration, expected to be valid at lower density.

$$J = - \frac{\hbar^2}{32} \frac{8^4 a^2}{2} e^{-\frac{8^2 a^2}{2}}. \quad (10)$$

The experimental data of Meyer, Adams and Fairbank<sup>9</sup> can be used to estimate the Curie temperature  $T_C$  as a function of lattice constant. Their data are shown in Fig. 9. We estimate  $T_C$  by using the definition of  $T_C$  contained in the Curie-Weiss law:<sup>10</sup>

---

<sup>9</sup>E. Dwight Adams, H. Meyer, and W. M. Fairbank, Helium Three (Edited by J. G. Daunt, Ohio State University Press, Columbus, Ohio, 1960) p. 57. The author is indebted to them for making their data available.

<sup>10</sup>J. K. Van Vleck, J. phys. radium 12, 262 (1951).

(1)  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^n f\left(\frac{k}{n}\right) = \int_0^1 f(x) dx$   
 (2)  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^n f\left(\frac{k}{n}\right) = \int_0^1 f(x) dx$   
 (3)  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^n f\left(\frac{k}{n}\right) = \int_0^1 f(x) dx$   
 (4)  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^n f\left(\frac{k}{n}\right) = \int_0^1 f(x) dx$

(5)  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^n f\left(\frac{k}{n}\right) = \int_0^1 f(x) dx$   
 (6)  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^n f\left(\frac{k}{n}\right) = \int_0^1 f(x) dx$

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^n f\left(\frac{k}{n}\right) = \int_0^1 f(x) dx$$

(7)  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^n f\left(\frac{k}{n}\right) = \int_0^1 f(x) dx$   
 (8)  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^n f\left(\frac{k}{n}\right) = \int_0^1 f(x) dx$   
 (9)  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^n f\left(\frac{k}{n}\right) = \int_0^1 f(x) dx$

### PROBLEM 10

(1)  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^n f\left(\frac{k}{n}\right) = \int_0^1 f(x) dx$   
 (2)  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^n f\left(\frac{k}{n}\right) = \int_0^1 f(x) dx$   
 (3)  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^n f\left(\frac{k}{n}\right) = \int_0^1 f(x) dx$

$$(4) \quad \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^n f\left(\frac{k}{n}\right) = \int_0^1 f(x) dx$$

(5)  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^n f\left(\frac{k}{n}\right) = \int_0^1 f(x) dx$   
 (6)  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^n f\left(\frac{k}{n}\right) = \int_0^1 f(x) dx$   
 (7)  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^n f\left(\frac{k}{n}\right) = \int_0^1 f(x) dx$

(8)  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^n f\left(\frac{k}{n}\right) = \int_0^1 f(x) dx$   
 (9)  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^n f\left(\frac{k}{n}\right) = \int_0^1 f(x) dx$   
 (10)  $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^n f\left(\frac{k}{n}\right) = \int_0^1 f(x) dx$



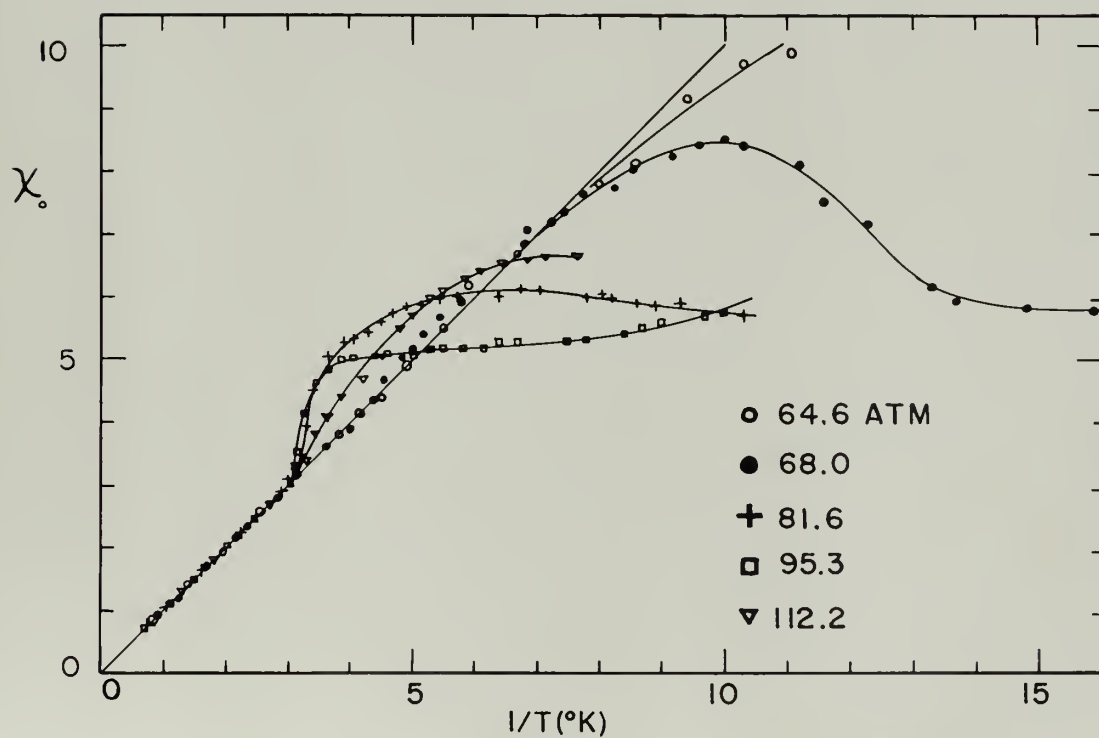
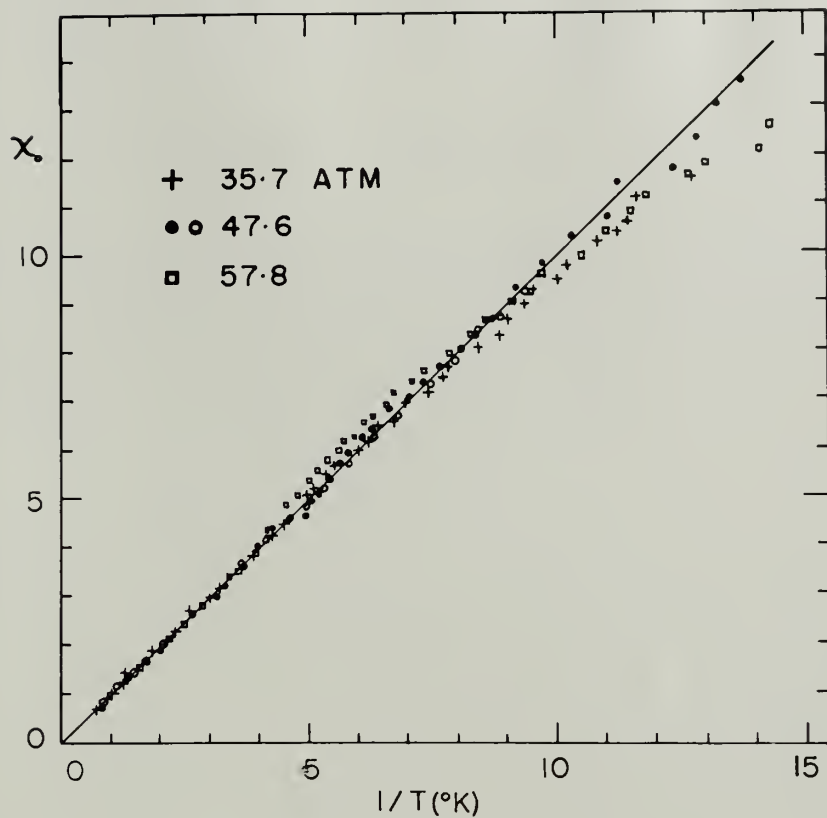


Figure 9

SUSCEPTIBILITY OF SOLID  $\text{He}^3$  FOR VARIOUS PRESSURES VS  $1/T$



$$\chi = \frac{C}{T + T_C} \quad T > T_C, \quad (11)$$

where  $\chi$  is the magnetic bulk susceptibility,  $C$  is the Curie constant for  $\text{He}^3$ ,  $T$  is the temperature, and  $T_C$  is the Curie temperature. The Curie temperature is given by the exchange energy

$$T_C = \frac{\epsilon}{\lambda} - \frac{J_\lambda n_\lambda}{2}.$$

Here  $J_\lambda$  is the exchange energy (a negative number) with respect to the class of neighbors  $\lambda$ , and  $n_\lambda$  is the number of  $\lambda$ -type neighbors.

We have estimated  $T_C$  for various values of  $a$  from the experimental data.<sup>8</sup> We obtain the values by replotting the susceptibility as  $1/\chi$  against  $T$ . The low-pressure curves thus plotted have an unmistakable straight line portion, with a negative intercept on the  $T$  axis. This intercept gives the value of  $T_C$ , provided that the temperature of the portion of the curve from which the extrapolation was made lies well above  $T_C$ . In Fig. 10 we show such a plot for a pressure of 35.7 atm. In Fig. 11 we show the results of several such plots from the data of Fig. 9. The extrapolation process introduces an uncertainty which we have indicated on the figure. On the same figure, we have plotted  $T_C$  obtained from our theory. The agreement with experiment is good at large values of the lattice constant, but obviously breaks down for denser solids. Since our theoretical value of  $J$  ignores the non-spherical symmetry of the locations of nearest and next nearest neighbors, and does not include the effect of next nearest neighbors on exchange, one would be led to introduce cubic symmetry into  $\gamma(1)$  instead of spherical

Let  $f(x)$  be the function defined by  $f(x) = \frac{1}{2} \sqrt{2} - x$  for  $x \in [0, 1]$ . Then  $f(x)$  is a continuous function on  $[0, 1]$  and  $f(0) = \frac{1}{2} \sqrt{2}$ ,  $f(1) = \frac{1}{2} \sqrt{2} - 1$ . Since  $f(0) > f(1)$ , by the Intermediate Value Theorem, there exists a point  $c \in (0, 1)$  such that  $f(c) = 0$ .

$$f(c) = \frac{1}{2} \sqrt{2} - c = 0$$

Thus  $c = \frac{1}{2} \sqrt{2}$  is the unique point in  $(0, 1)$  such that  $f(c) = 0$ . This means that  $\frac{1}{2} \sqrt{2}$  is the unique point in  $(0, 1)$  such that  $\frac{1}{2} \sqrt{2} - x = 0$ . Therefore,  $\frac{1}{2} \sqrt{2}$  is the unique point in  $(0, 1)$  such that  $x = \frac{1}{2} \sqrt{2}$ . This completes the proof.



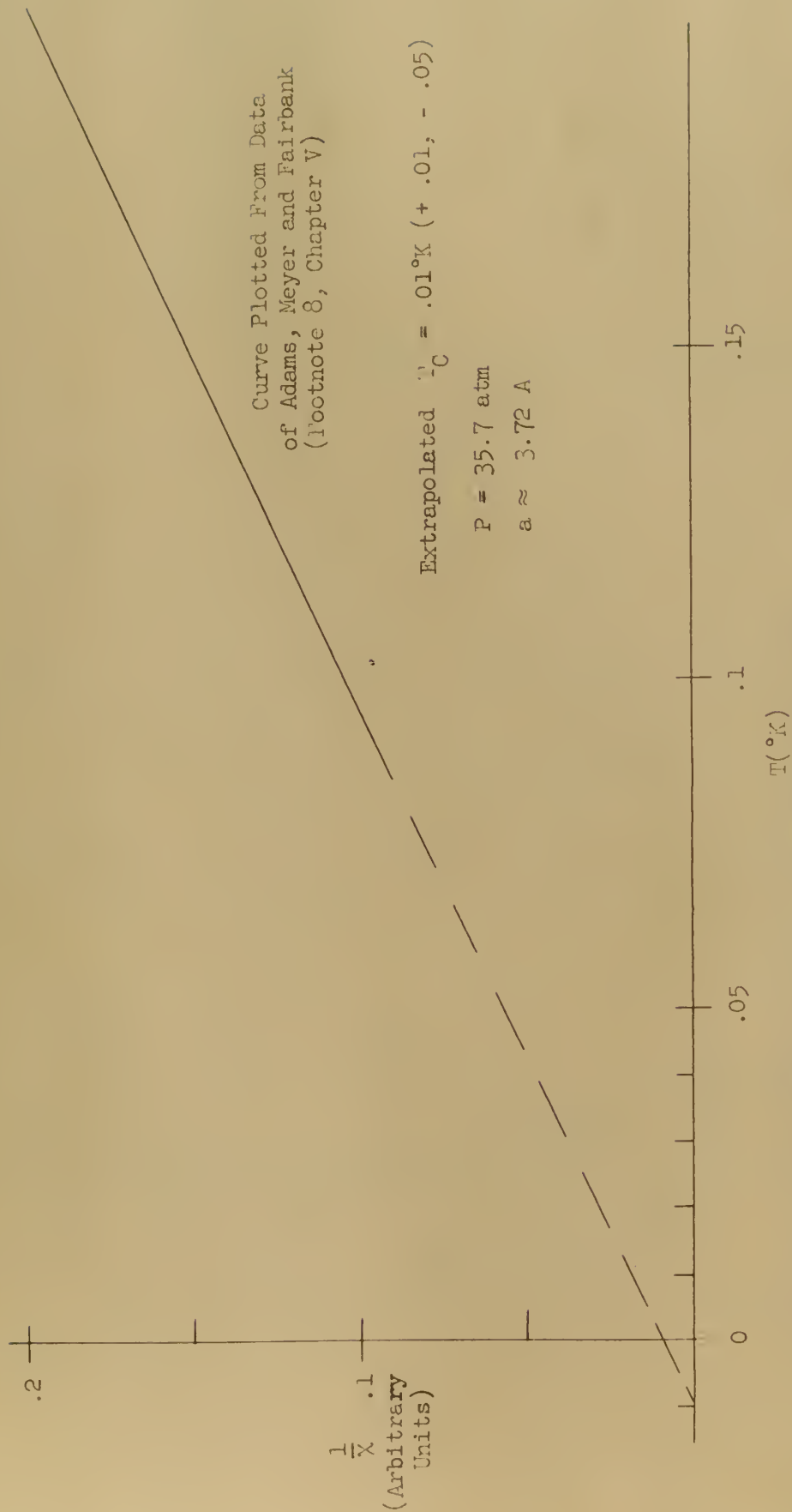


Figure 10 Curie Temperature for Pressure of 35.7 atm.



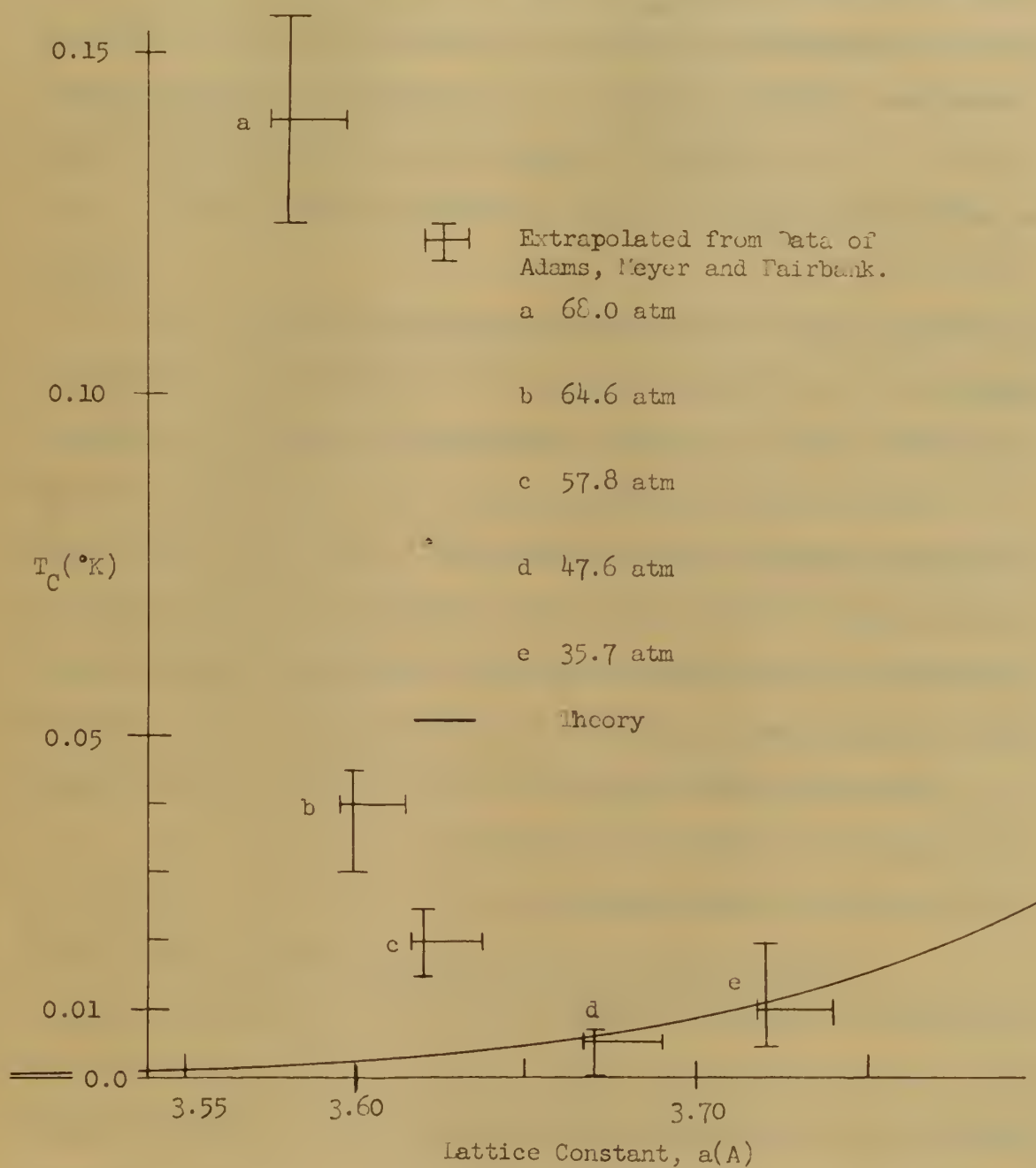


Figure 11. Curie Temperature vs Lattice Constant



symmetry. There would then be a hope of predicting the sharp break in  $T_C$  below  $a = 3.6 \text{ \AA}$  as a result of introducing interactions with next nearest neighbors. Calculation of  $J$ , using Eq. (IV-64), would also predict the contribution of next nearest neighbors.

We can construct a picture to explain the experimental data, as follows:

(a) At large separations, correlations are relaxed and there is comparatively large overlap of the atomic wave functions. The exchange integral is characteristically negative because the lattice structure and correlations tend to hold the atoms apart in a region where  $\partial V(r_{ij})/\partial r_{ij}$  is positive. The symmetric space configuration permits the atoms to be closer together, with a lower potential energy. The kinetic energy is changed but little between the states of differing symmetry. (Note that here we do not rely on the wave function  $\chi$  to carry the interaction, but refer to the interparticle potential.)

(b) As the atoms are brought closer together, correlations become "tighter," the region of overlap between nearest neighbors becomes small, and the exchange integral likewise becomes smaller.

(c) At still lower values of lattice constant, the correlations between nearest neighbors become so "stiff" as to greatly reduce overlap. However, correlations between next nearest neighbors are not as restrictive, and appreciable overlap (and also exchange energy) will exist between them.

All the preceding appears to be substantiated by the behavior of our predicted  $J$  with changing lattice constant. We can extend the





picture without violating what we have learned from the theory. It is common<sup>10,11</sup> for antiferromagnetic substances, with decreasing temperature, to show a temperature dependent increase of the quantity  $\chi T$  over the constant value of the Curie law,  $\chi T = C$ . The quantity  $\chi T$  reaches a maximum at the Néel temperature  $T_N$ .<sup>12</sup> At lower temperatures,  $\chi T$  falls to zero linearly. This behavior is predicted by the theory<sup>10,11</sup> when interactions with next nearest neighbors are taken into account, in a structure where alternating adjacent crystal planes carry identical spins in each plane, but opposing spins from plane to plane.

Further, it is known<sup>10</sup> that when the sublattices retain their mutual correlations (e.g., nearest neighbors antiparallel, next nearest neighbors parallel) that  $\chi(T = 0) = 2/3 \chi(T = T_N)$ . In this expression,  $T_N$  is the Néel temperature. If there is no connection between sublattices (e.g., nearest neighbors without correlation, next nearest neighbors antiparallel, or ordering of the second kind), this relationship does not hold.

---

<sup>11</sup>C. J. Gorter, Proceedings of the Symposium on Solid and Liquid Helium Three (Ohio State University and Air Force Office of Scientific Research, 1957) p. 199.

<sup>12</sup>The Néel temperature  $T_N$  is the temperature below which an antiferromagnetic substance shows magnetic ordering in zero external magnetic field. The Curie temperature  $T_C$  is defined as the parameter  $T_C$  in the Curie-Weiss law, Eq. (11). In general,  $T_N < T_C$ , with their ratio (never greater than 3) determined by the relative magnitudes of the exchange interaction between nearest neighbors compared to that between next nearest neighbors. Van Vleck<sup>10</sup> and T. Nagamiya, K. Yosida, and R. Kubo, Advances in Physics 4, 1 (1955) give extensive reviews of antiferromagnetism.

At the same time, the government has been working to improve the quality of the education system, particularly in the areas of teacher training and curriculum development. The Ministry of Education has implemented a series of reforms aimed at making the education system more efficient and effective. These reforms include the introduction of a new curriculum, the implementation of a teacher training program, and the establishment of a system of quality assurance for schools. The government has also been working to improve the infrastructure of the education system, particularly in the areas of school buildings and equipment. These efforts have resulted in a significant improvement in the quality of the education system, and the government is committed to continuing these efforts in the future.

100

The government has also been working to improve the quality of the education system, particularly in the areas of teacher training and curriculum development. The Ministry of Education has implemented a series of reforms aimed at making the education system more efficient and effective. These reforms include the introduction of a new curriculum, the implementation of a teacher training program, and the establishment of a system of quality assurance for schools. The government has also been working to improve the infrastructure of the education system, particularly in the areas of school buildings and equipment. These efforts have resulted in a significant improvement in the quality of the education system, and the government is committed to continuing these efforts in the future.

The government has also been working to improve the quality of the education system, particularly in the areas of teacher training and curriculum development. The Ministry of Education has implemented a series of reforms aimed at making the education system more efficient and effective. These reforms include the introduction of a new curriculum, the implementation of a teacher training program, and the establishment of a system of quality assurance for schools. The government has also been working to improve the infrastructure of the education system, particularly in the areas of school buildings and equipment. These efforts have resulted in a significant improvement in the quality of the education system, and the government is committed to continuing these efforts in the future.



Reference to Fig. 9 shows that the data for 68.0 Atm have a definite maximum at  $\chi = (\text{const}) \times 8.6$ ,  $T = 0.1^\circ \text{ K}$ . The expected value of  $\chi(T = 0)$  if  $T_N = 0.1^\circ \text{ K}$  is then  $\chi = 5.75 (\text{const})$ . The observed value at  $0.0625^\circ \text{ K}$  is  $\chi = (\text{const}) 5.8$ , and falling slowly. Hence, the data at 68.0 Atm might correspond to an antiferromagnet with a Néel temperature of  $0.1^\circ \text{ K}$ , with interactions between nearest neighbors and next nearest neighbors of equal importance, conforming to the theoretical prediction<sup>10</sup> that  $\chi(T = 0) = 2/3 \chi(T = T_N)$ .

At higher pressures the overlap between nearest neighbors will be reduced still further, and interactions with next nearest neighbors should predominate. Then the relationship  $\chi(T = 0) = 2/3 \chi(T = T_N)$  will no longer hold. The data show no tendency to follow this relationship at high pressures, supporting the conjecture that the exchange interaction with one of the classes of neighbors is very weak compared to that with the other class of neighbors. Our exchange energy becomes small at high density because of small overlap, resulting from the strong exclusion of the correlation function  $\chi^2$  at small distances. It can be expected therefore to represent interactions between nearest neighbors. Since it continues to fall as the density increases, we may state that the theory indicates that  $J$  (nearest neighbors) is small at high density. Then the observed marked increase in  $T_C$  at high density should stem from an exchange interaction with next nearest neighbors. A magnetic transition might occur when the next nearest exchange integral grows large. A specific heat peak at the transition temperature, which might be a comparatively high temperature at elevated pressure, could explain the difficulty in

the first two terms of the expansion of  $\log(1+x)$  are  $x - \frac{1}{2}x^2$ .

Let  $f(x) = \log(1+x)$ . Then  $f'(x) = \frac{1}{1+x}$  and  $f''(x) = -\frac{1}{(1+x)^2}$ .

Let  $T_1(x) = x$  and  $T_2(x) = x - \frac{1}{2}x^2$ . Then  $T_1(x) = x$  and  $T_2(x) = x - \frac{1}{2}x^2$ .

Let  $R_1(x) = f(x) - T_1(x)$  and  $R_2(x) = f(x) - T_2(x)$ . Then  $R_1(x) = \log(1+x) - x$  and  $R_2(x) = \log(1+x) - x + \frac{1}{2}x^2$ .

Let  $M_1(x)$  be the maximum value of  $|R_1(x)|$  on  $[-1, 1]$ . Then  $M_1(x) = \frac{1}{2}$ .

Let  $M_2(x)$  be the maximum value of  $|R_2(x)|$  on  $[-1, 1]$ . Then  $M_2(x) = \frac{1}{6}$ .

Let  $T_3(x) = x - \frac{1}{2}x^2 + \frac{1}{3}x^3$ . Then  $T_3(x) = x - \frac{1}{2}x^2 + \frac{1}{3}x^3$ .

Let  $R_3(x) = f(x) - T_3(x)$ . Then  $R_3(x) = \log(1+x) - x + \frac{1}{2}x^2 - \frac{1}{3}x^3$ .

Let  $M_3(x)$  be the maximum value of  $|R_3(x)|$  on  $[-1, 1]$ . Then  $M_3(x) = \frac{1}{24}$ .

Let  $T_4(x) = x - \frac{1}{2}x^2 + \frac{1}{3}x^3 - \frac{1}{4}x^4$ . Then  $T_4(x) = x - \frac{1}{2}x^2 + \frac{1}{3}x^3 - \frac{1}{4}x^4$ .

Let  $R_4(x) = f(x) - T_4(x)$ . Then  $R_4(x) = \log(1+x) - x + \frac{1}{2}x^2 - \frac{1}{3}x^3 + \frac{1}{4}x^4$ .

Let  $M_4(x)$  be the maximum value of  $|R_4(x)|$  on  $[-1, 1]$ . Then  $M_4(x) = \frac{1}{120}$ .

Let  $T_5(x) = x - \frac{1}{2}x^2 + \frac{1}{3}x^3 - \frac{1}{4}x^4 + \frac{1}{5}x^5$ . Then  $T_5(x) = x - \frac{1}{2}x^2 + \frac{1}{3}x^3 - \frac{1}{4}x^4 + \frac{1}{5}x^5$ .

Let  $R_5(x) = f(x) - T_5(x)$ . Then  $R_5(x) = \log(1+x) - x + \frac{1}{2}x^2 - \frac{1}{3}x^3 + \frac{1}{4}x^4 - \frac{1}{5}x^5$ .

Let  $M_5(x)$  be the maximum value of  $|R_5(x)|$  on  $[-1, 1]$ . Then  $M_5(x) = \frac{1}{720}$ .

Let  $T_6(x) = x - \frac{1}{2}x^2 + \frac{1}{3}x^3 - \frac{1}{4}x^4 + \frac{1}{5}x^5 - \frac{1}{6}x^6$ . Then  $T_6(x) = x - \frac{1}{2}x^2 + \frac{1}{3}x^3 - \frac{1}{4}x^4 + \frac{1}{5}x^5 - \frac{1}{6}x^6$ .

Let  $R_6(x) = f(x) - T_6(x)$ . Then  $R_6(x) = \log(1+x) - x + \frac{1}{2}x^2 - \frac{1}{3}x^3 + \frac{1}{4}x^4 - \frac{1}{5}x^5 + \frac{1}{6}x^6$ .

Let  $M_6(x)$  be the maximum value of  $|R_6(x)|$  on  $[-1, 1]$ . Then  $M_6(x) = \frac{1}{5040}$ .

Let  $T_7(x) = x - \frac{1}{2}x^2 + \frac{1}{3}x^3 - \frac{1}{4}x^4 + \frac{1}{5}x^5 - \frac{1}{6}x^6 + \frac{1}{7}x^7$ . Then  $T_7(x) = x - \frac{1}{2}x^2 + \frac{1}{3}x^3 - \frac{1}{4}x^4 + \frac{1}{5}x^5 - \frac{1}{6}x^6 + \frac{1}{7}x^7$ .

Let  $R_7(x) = f(x) - T_7(x)$ . Then  $R_7(x) = \log(1+x) - x + \frac{1}{2}x^2 - \frac{1}{3}x^3 + \frac{1}{4}x^4 - \frac{1}{5}x^5 + \frac{1}{6}x^6 - \frac{1}{7}x^7$ .

Let  $M_7(x)$  be the maximum value of  $|R_7(x)|$  on  $[-1, 1]$ . Then  $M_7(x) = \frac{1}{42000}$ .

Let  $T_8(x) = x - \frac{1}{2}x^2 + \frac{1}{3}x^3 - \frac{1}{4}x^4 + \frac{1}{5}x^5 - \frac{1}{6}x^6 + \frac{1}{7}x^7 - \frac{1}{8}x^8$ . Then  $T_8(x) = x - \frac{1}{2}x^2 + \frac{1}{3}x^3 - \frac{1}{4}x^4 + \frac{1}{5}x^5 - \frac{1}{6}x^6 + \frac{1}{7}x^7 - \frac{1}{8}x^8$ .

Let  $R_8(x) = f(x) - T_8(x)$ . Then  $R_8(x) = \log(1+x) - x + \frac{1}{2}x^2 - \frac{1}{3}x^3 + \frac{1}{4}x^4 - \frac{1}{5}x^5 + \frac{1}{6}x^6 - \frac{1}{7}x^7 + \frac{1}{8}x^8$ .

Let  $M_8(x)$  be the maximum value of  $|R_8(x)|$  on  $[-1, 1]$ . Then  $M_8(x) = \frac{1}{336000}$ .

Let  $T_9(x) = x - \frac{1}{2}x^2 + \frac{1}{3}x^3 - \frac{1}{4}x^4 + \frac{1}{5}x^5 - \frac{1}{6}x^6 + \frac{1}{7}x^7 - \frac{1}{8}x^8 + \frac{1}{9}x^9$ . Then  $T_9(x) = x - \frac{1}{2}x^2 + \frac{1}{3}x^3 - \frac{1}{4}x^4 + \frac{1}{5}x^5 - \frac{1}{6}x^6 + \frac{1}{7}x^7 - \frac{1}{8}x^8 + \frac{1}{9}x^9$ .



attaining thermal equilibrium reported by Adams, Meyer, and Fairbank.<sup>2</sup>

### Conclusions

Using a two-particle separation of the wave function, we have made an approximate solution for the ground state of solid helium three. We use a description of the solid in a single-particle representation which is determined by the many-body properties of the solid. We adequately predict the density behavior of the cohesive energy of the solid in the body-centered cubic phase. Near the melting curve, we predict an antiferromagnetic Curie temperature of the order of  $0.01^\circ \text{K}$ , and at a slightly higher density, a Curie temperature of about  $0.005^\circ \text{K}$ , in agreement with experiment.

1. The first of these is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

### 2. The second is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

3. The third is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

4. The fourth is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

5. The fifth is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

6. The sixth is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

7. The seventh is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

8. The eighth is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

9. The ninth is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

10. The tenth is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

11. The eleventh is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

12. The twelfth is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

13. The thirteenth is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

14. The fourteenth is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

15. The fifteenth is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

16. The sixteenth is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

17. The seventeenth is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

18. The eighteenth is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

19. The nineteenth is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

20. The twentieth is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

21. The twenty-first is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

22. The twenty-second is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

23. The twenty-third is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

24. The twenty-fourth is the fact that the present system of taxation is not only unfair but also inefficient.

## APPENDICES



## APPENDIX A

### THE DERIVATIVES OF THE WAVE FUNCTION

#### WITH INTERPARTICLE PARAMETERS<sup>a</sup>

We use the following well-known theorem.

If  $f(x^i) = f(x_1, y_1, z_1, x_2, y_2, z_2, \dots, x_N, y_N, z_N, r_{12}, r_{13}, \dots, r_{23}, r_{24}, \dots, r_{N-1,N})$  is a function<sup>b</sup> of  $n$  variables, and if the  $x^i$  are each differentiable functions of  $n$  variables  $u^i$ ,  $u^i = u_1, v_1, w_1, u_2, v_2, w_2, \dots$ , then

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial u^j} = \sum_{i=1}^n \frac{\partial f}{\partial x^i} \frac{\partial x^i}{\partial u^j} \quad (A-1)$$

In our case, we have a spatial wave function  $g(u^i) = g(u_1, v_1, w_1, u_2, \dots, v_N, w_N)$ , where  $u, v$ , and  $w$  are the Cartesian coordinates. The number  $n$  is therefore  $3N$ . The Fluvinege wave function is a new function  $f(x^i) = f(x_1, y_1, z_1, x_2, \dots, y_N, z_N, r_{12}, r_{13}, \dots, r_{23}, r_{24}, \dots, r_{N-1,N})$ . We make each  $x^i$  a function of the  $u^i$

$$x_1 = u_1$$

$$y_1 = v_1$$

$$z_1 = w_1$$

$$\vdots \quad \vdots \quad \vdots$$

<sup>a</sup>The work of Fluvinege and Walsh and Borowitz displays the Laplacian operator in spherical coordinates. We perform a separate derivation here in order to display the transformation in a form independent of representation.

<sup>b</sup>In our notation, the upper index denotes the entire class of variables. For example,  $x^i$  includes  $x_1, y_1$ , and  $z_1$ , as well as  $r_{jk}$ . There is no symbol  $y^i$ .



# THEORY OF THE POLYMERIZATION OF

## ACRYLAMIDE

Received November 10, 1964

It is shown that the polymerization of acrylamide is a free-radical process. The rate of polymerization is given by the equation  $R_p = k_p [M] \sqrt{k_d / k_t}$ , where  $k_p$  is the propagation rate constant,  $k_d$  is the decomposition rate constant of the initiator, and  $k_t$  is the termination rate constant. The activation energy of the polymerization is 10.5 kcal/mole.

(1964)

$$\frac{d[M]}{dt} = -k_p [M] \sqrt{k_d / k_t}$$

It is shown that the polymerization of acrylamide is a free-radical process.

The rate of polymerization is given by the equation  $R_p = k_p [M] \sqrt{k_d / k_t}$ , where  $k_p$  is the propagation rate constant,  $k_d$  is the decomposition rate constant of the initiator, and  $k_t$  is the termination rate constant.

The activation energy of the polymerization is 10.5 kcal/mole.

The rate of polymerization is given by the equation  $R_p = k_p [M] \sqrt{k_d / k_t}$ , where  $k_p$  is the propagation rate constant,  $k_d$  is the decomposition rate constant of the initiator, and  $k_t$  is the termination rate constant.

$$R_p = k_p [M] \sqrt{k_d / k_t}$$

$$R_p = k_p [M] \sqrt{k_d / k_t}$$

$$R_p = k_p [M] \sqrt{k_d / k_t}$$

$$R_p = k_p [M] \sqrt{k_d / k_t}$$

The rate of polymerization is given by the equation  $R_p = k_p [M] \sqrt{k_d / k_t}$ , where  $k_p$  is the propagation rate constant,  $k_d$  is the decomposition rate constant of the initiator, and  $k_t$  is the termination rate constant.

The rate of polymerization is given by the equation  $R_p = k_p [M] \sqrt{k_d / k_t}$ , where  $k_p$  is the propagation rate constant,  $k_d$  is the decomposition rate constant of the initiator, and  $k_t$  is the termination rate constant.

$$r_{12} = \sqrt{(u_1 - u_2)^2 + (v_1 - v_2)^2 + (w_1 - w_2)^2} \quad (\text{A-2})$$

etc.

We construct  $f$  in this way so that the operators in II can find appropriate variables in  $f$ . However, the rules of physics apply to  $g$  so we must require that  $f = g$  everywhere.

Operations on  $g$  using the function  $f$ , and not involving derivatives, proceed merely by applying the conditions (A-2). However, if derivatives such as  $\partial g / \partial u^{(1)}$  and  $\partial^2 g / \partial u^{(1)2}$  are required, we must employ (A-1), then apply (A-2) to the resulting functions, if we wish to use  $f$  as an analytical tool.

For example, we obtain  $\partial g / \partial v_1$ . Since  $f = g$  everywhere:

$$\frac{\partial g}{\partial v_1} = \frac{\partial f}{\partial v_1},$$

then

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial g}{\partial v_1} &= \frac{\partial f}{\partial v_1} = \sum_{j=1}^n \frac{\partial f}{\partial x^j} \frac{\partial x^j}{\partial v_1} \\ \frac{\partial f}{\partial v_1} &= \frac{\partial f}{\partial y_1} + \sum_{j > k} \frac{\partial f}{\partial x^{jk}} \frac{\partial x^{jk}}{\partial v_1} \end{aligned} \quad (\text{A-3})$$

This is the rule of differentiation, Eq. III-(6).

To form the second derivative, we employ (A-3) twice:

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial^2 g}{\partial v_1^2} &= \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial v_1^2} \\ &= \frac{\partial}{\partial v} \frac{\partial f}{\partial y} + \sum_k \frac{\partial f}{\partial x_{1k}} \frac{\partial x_{1k}}{\partial v_1} \end{aligned}$$



$$\begin{aligned}
 &= \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial y_1^2} + \sum_j \frac{\partial}{\partial r_{1j}} \frac{\partial f}{\partial y_1} \frac{\partial r_{1j}}{\partial v_1} + \sum_k \left( \frac{\partial}{\partial v_1} \frac{\partial f}{\partial r_{1k}} \right) \frac{\partial r_{1k}}{\partial v_1} + \sum_k \frac{\partial f}{\partial r_{1k}} \frac{\partial^2 r_{1k}}{\partial v_1^2} \\
 &= \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial y_1^2} + \sum_j \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial r_{1j} \partial y_1} \frac{\partial r_{1j}}{\partial v_1} + \sum_k \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial y_1 \partial r_{1k}} \frac{\partial r_{1k}}{\partial v_1} \\
 &\quad + \sum_k \sum_j \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial r_{1j} \partial r_{1k}} \frac{\partial r_{1j}}{\partial v_1} \frac{\partial r_{1k}}{\partial v_1} + \sum_k \frac{\partial f}{\partial r_{1k}} \frac{\partial^2 r_{1k}}{\partial v_1^2} \\
 \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial v_1^2} &= \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial y_1^2} + 2 \sum_j \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial r_{1j} \partial y_1} \frac{\partial r_{1j}}{\partial v_1} + \sum_j \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial r_{1j}^2} \left( \frac{\partial r_{1j}}{\partial v_1} \right)^2 \\
 &\quad + \sum_{k \neq j} \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial r_{1j} \partial r_{1k}} \frac{\partial r_{1j}}{\partial v_1} \frac{\partial r_{1k}}{\partial v_1} + \sum_j \frac{\partial f}{\partial r_{1j}} \frac{\partial^2 r_{1j}}{\partial v_1^2} \quad (A-4)
 \end{aligned}$$

In what follows, we label both the  $u_1, v_1, v_2$  and the  $x_1, y_1, z_1$  by  $x_1, y_1$  and  $z_1$ . We need only to remember that the coefficients

$$\frac{\partial^2}{\partial v_1^2} \rightarrow \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_1^2} \quad \text{commute with all the differential operators on the right}$$

of (A-4). Putting  $y_1 \rightarrow x_1$ , and defining  $\sum \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_1^2} = \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_1^2} + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial y_1^2} + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial z_1^2} = \nabla_1^2$ , we obtain the Laplacian. Since  $r_{1j}^2 = \sum_k (x_j - x_k)^2$

$$\frac{\partial r_{1j}}{\partial x_1} = \frac{x_1 - x_j}{r_{1j}}$$

$$\frac{\partial^2 r_{1j}}{\partial x_1^2} = \frac{1}{r_{1j}} - \frac{(x_1 - x_j)^2}{r_{1j}^3} \quad (A-5)$$

$$\frac{d^2}{dt^2} \left( \frac{1}{r} \right) = - \frac{1}{r^3} \left( \frac{dr}{dt} \right)^2 + \frac{1}{r^3} \left( \frac{d^2 r}{dt^2} \right)$$

$$\frac{d^2}{dt^2} \left( \frac{1}{r} \right) = - \frac{1}{r^3} \left( \frac{dr}{dt} \right)^2 + \frac{1}{r^3} \left( \frac{d^2 r}{dt^2} \right)$$

$$\frac{d^2}{dt^2} \left( \frac{1}{r} \right) = - \frac{1}{r^3} \left( \frac{dr}{dt} \right)^2 + \frac{1}{r^3} \left( \frac{d^2 r}{dt^2} \right)$$

$$\left( \frac{d^2}{dt^2} \right) \left( \frac{1}{r} \right) = - \frac{1}{r^3} \left( \frac{dr}{dt} \right)^2 + \frac{1}{r^3} \left( \frac{d^2 r}{dt^2} \right)$$

$$\frac{d^2}{dt^2} \left( \frac{1}{r} \right) = - \frac{1}{r^3} \left( \frac{dr}{dt} \right)^2 + \frac{1}{r^3} \left( \frac{d^2 r}{dt^2} \right)$$

Let us now consider the case in which the motion is circular, so that  $r = r_0$  and  $\frac{dr}{dt} = 0$ .

In this case, the first term on the right-hand side of the equation vanishes, and we have

$$\frac{d^2}{dt^2} \left( \frac{1}{r_0} \right) = \frac{1}{r_0^3} \left( \frac{d^2 r}{dt^2} \right)$$

Since  $r_0$  is a constant, the left-hand side of the equation is zero, and we have

$$\frac{d^2 r}{dt^2} = 0$$

$$\frac{d^2 r}{dt^2} = 0$$

$$\frac{d^2 r}{dt^2} = 0$$



Putting (A-5) into (A-4),

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_i \sum_k \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial x_i^2} &= \sum_i \nabla_i^2 f \rightarrow \sum_i \left[ \sum_k \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial x_i^2} + \sum_j \sum_k \left[ \frac{(x_i - x_j)^2}{r_{ij}^2} \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial x_i^2} \right. \right. \\ &+ \left. \left. \left( \frac{1}{r_{ij}} - \frac{(x_i - x_j)^2}{r_{ij}^3} \right) \frac{\partial f}{\partial r_{ij}} \right] + \sum_{j,k} \frac{(x_i - x_j)}{r_{ij}} \left[ \left( \frac{\partial}{\partial x_i} - \frac{\partial}{\partial x_j} \right) + \left( \frac{\partial}{\partial x_i} + \frac{\partial}{\partial x_j} \right) \right] \frac{\partial f}{\partial r_{ij}} \right. \\ &+ \left. \sum_{j,k} \sum_k \frac{(x_i - x_k)(x_i - x_j)}{r_{ik} r_{ij}} \frac{\partial}{\partial r_{ij}} \frac{\partial f}{\partial r_{ik}} \right] ; \end{aligned} \quad (A-6)$$

here, we have separated the term involving  $\frac{\partial}{\partial x_i} \frac{\partial}{\partial r_{ij}}$  into its symmetric and antisymmetric parts in  $i$  and  $j$ . On performing the summation over  $i$  and  $j$ , we find that only the symmetric part remains.

Performing the summation over  $k$ , suppressing  $f$ , and noting that  $\sum_k (x_i - x_j)^2 = r_{ij}^2$ , we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_i \sum_k \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_i^2} &= \sum_i \nabla_i^2 \rightarrow \sum_i \nabla_i^2 + \sum_i \sum_j \left( \frac{\partial^2}{\partial r_{ij}^2} + \frac{3-1}{r_{ij}} \frac{\partial}{\partial r_{ij}} \right) \\ &+ \sum_i \sum_j \sum_k \frac{(x_i - x_j)}{r_{ij}} \left( \frac{\partial}{\partial x_i} - \frac{\partial}{\partial x_j} \right) \frac{\partial}{\partial r_{ij}} + \sum_i \sum_j \sum_k \sum_l \frac{(x_i - x_j)(x_i - x_k)}{r_{ij} r_{ik}} \frac{\partial^2}{\partial r_{ik} \partial r_{ij}} \end{aligned} \quad (A-7)$$

We introduce the transformation

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{r}_{x,ij} &= \mathbf{x}_j - \mathbf{x}_i \quad (\text{the interparticle displacement}) \\ 2 \mathbf{r}_{c,ij} &= \mathbf{x}_j + \mathbf{x}_i \quad (\text{the position of the center of mass}). \end{aligned}$$

$$\text{Then } \frac{\partial}{\partial x_i} - \frac{\partial}{\partial x_j} = -2 \frac{\partial}{\partial \mathbf{r}_{c,ij}} = -2 \left( \frac{\partial}{\partial \mathbf{r}} \right)_x,$$

(134) and (135) become

$$\left[ \frac{\frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} \right)}{\frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta}} \right] \cdot \left[ \frac{\frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} \right)}{\frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta}} \right] = \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} \right)$$

$$\left[ \left( \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} \right) \cdot \left( \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} \right) \right] \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} \right) = \left[ \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} \right) \right] \cdot \left( \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} \right)$$

(136)

$$\left[ \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} \right) \right] \cdot \left( \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} \right) = \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} \right)$$

Therefore, we have  $\frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} \right) = \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} \right)$  and the following result is obtained:

THEOREM 1. Let  $\alpha, \beta$  be two positive real numbers such that  $\alpha < \beta$ .

Then, the following inequality holds:  $\frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} \right) < \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta}$ .

PROOF. Let  $\alpha, \beta$  be two positive real numbers such that  $\alpha < \beta$ . Then, we have

$$\frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} = \frac{\beta - \alpha}{\alpha\beta} > 0$$

$$\left( \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} \right) \cdot \left( \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} \right) = \left( \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} \right)^2 > 0$$

(137)

$$\frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} = \frac{\beta - \alpha}{\alpha\beta} > 0 \quad \text{and} \quad \left( \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} \right)^2 > 0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} > \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} \right)$$

Therefore, the following inequality holds:

$$\frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} > \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} \right)$$

THEOREM 2. Let  $\alpha, \beta$  be two positive real numbers such that  $\alpha < \beta$ .

$$\frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} > \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta} \right) > \frac{1}{\alpha} - \frac{1}{\beta}$$

where

$$\vec{\nabla}_{s,ij} = \frac{\partial}{\partial x_{s,ij}} \hat{i} + \frac{\partial}{\partial y_{s,ij}} \hat{j} + \frac{\partial}{\partial z_{s,ij}} \hat{k},$$

and  $(x_i - x_j)(x_i - x_k) = (-s_{x,ij})(-s_{x,ik}),$

so that  $\sum_i (x_i - x_j)(x_i - x_k) = \vec{s}_{ij} \cdot \vec{s}_{ik}.$

After putting these definitions in (7), we get

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_i \nabla_i^2 &\rightarrow \sum_i \nabla_i^2 + \sum_{ij} \left( \frac{\partial^2}{\partial r_{ij}^2} + \frac{2}{r_{ij}} \frac{\partial}{\partial r_{ij}} \right) \\ &+ \sum_{ij} \frac{2 \vec{s}_{ij} \cdot \vec{\nabla}_{s,ij}}{r_{ij}} \frac{\partial}{\partial r_{ij}} + \sum_{i,j,k} \frac{\vec{s}_{ij} \cdot \vec{s}_{ik}}{r_{ij} r_{ik}} \frac{\partial}{\partial r_{ik}} \frac{\partial}{\partial r_{ij}} \quad (A-8) \end{aligned}$$

where  $\vec{\nabla}_i$  and  $\vec{\nabla}_s$  operate on functions of  $x, y, z, s$  and  $t$ , and

where  $\frac{\partial}{\partial r_{ij}}$  acts only on functions of  $r_{ij}$ . The constraint  $r_{ij}^2$

$= \vec{s}_{ij} \cdot \vec{s}_{ij}$  is to be used after differentiation. Thereby, after using

(A-8) on  $f$ , the result is the same as though we had proceeded throughout

using the actual function  $g$  and the ordinary space derivatives. The

primes on the summations indicate that all indices are different on each

member of the sum.

$$f(x) = \frac{1}{x} + \frac{1}{x^2} + \frac{1}{x^3} + \dots$$

for  $x > 1$  (or  $x < -1$ ) we have  $|f(x)| < 1$  and

$$f(x) = \frac{1}{x} + \frac{1}{x^2} + \frac{1}{x^3} + \dots = \frac{1}{x} \left( 1 + \frac{1}{x} + \frac{1}{x^2} + \dots \right)$$

and since  $|f(x)| < 1$  we have  $|f(x)|^2 < |f(x)|$  and

$$f(x)^2 = \left( \frac{1}{x} + \frac{1}{x^2} + \frac{1}{x^3} + \dots \right)^2$$

$$= \frac{1}{x^2} + \frac{2}{x^3} + \frac{3}{x^4} + \dots$$

and since  $|f(x)| < 1$  we have  $|f(x)|^2 < |f(x)|$  and

$$\frac{1}{x^2} + \frac{2}{x^3} + \frac{3}{x^4} + \dots < \frac{1}{x} + \frac{1}{x^2} + \frac{1}{x^3} + \dots$$

and since  $|f(x)| < 1$  we have  $|f(x)|^2 < |f(x)|$  and

$$\frac{1}{x^2} + \frac{2}{x^3} + \frac{3}{x^4} + \dots < \frac{1}{x} + \frac{1}{x^2} + \frac{1}{x^3} + \dots$$

and since  $|f(x)| < 1$  we have  $|f(x)|^2 < |f(x)|$  and

$$\frac{1}{x^2} + \frac{2}{x^3} + \frac{3}{x^4} + \dots < \frac{1}{x} + \frac{1}{x^2} + \frac{1}{x^3} + \dots$$

and since  $|f(x)| < 1$  we have  $|f(x)|^2 < |f(x)|$  and

$$\frac{1}{x^2} + \frac{2}{x^3} + \frac{3}{x^4} + \dots < \frac{1}{x} + \frac{1}{x^2} + \frac{1}{x^3} + \dots$$

$$\frac{1}{x^2} + \frac{2}{x^3} + \frac{3}{x^4} + \dots < \frac{1}{x} + \frac{1}{x^2} + \frac{1}{x^3} + \dots$$

$$\frac{1}{x^2} + \frac{2}{x^3} + \frac{3}{x^4} + \dots < \frac{1}{x} + \frac{1}{x^2} + \frac{1}{x^3} + \dots$$

$$\frac{1}{x^2} + \frac{2}{x^3} + \frac{3}{x^4} + \dots < \frac{1}{x} + \frac{1}{x^2} + \frac{1}{x^3} + \dots$$

$$\frac{1}{x^2} + \frac{2}{x^3} + \frac{3}{x^4} + \dots < \frac{1}{x} + \frac{1}{x^2} + \frac{1}{x^3} + \dots$$

$$\frac{1}{x^2} + \frac{2}{x^3} + \frac{3}{x^4} + \dots < \frac{1}{x} + \frac{1}{x^2} + \frac{1}{x^3} + \dots$$

## APPENDIX B

### SOLUTION OF THE CORRELATION AMPLITUDE EQUATION

The correlation amplitude is defined by Eq. II-(16),

$$\left( -\frac{\hbar^2}{m} \nabla_r^2 + V(r) \right) \chi(r) = 0 \quad (\text{B-1})$$

$$\nabla_r^2 = \frac{\partial^2}{\partial r^2} + \frac{2}{r} \frac{\partial}{\partial r} \quad (\text{B-2})$$

$$V(r) = 4 \epsilon \left[ \left( \frac{\sigma}{r} \right)^{12} - \left( \frac{\sigma}{r} \right)^6 \right], \quad (\text{B-3})$$

where we drop the subscripts,  $ij$  from  $\chi_{ij}$ .

We are particularly interested in the solution in the range of  $r$  from just inside  $\sigma$  to infinity. An expansion of  $\chi$  in powers of  $\sigma/r$  will converge in this range, as demonstrated below. Writing (B-1) in detail, we have

$$-\frac{\hbar^2}{m} \left( \frac{\partial^2 \chi}{\partial r^2} + \frac{2}{r} \frac{\partial \chi}{\partial r} \right) + 4\epsilon \left[ \left( \frac{\sigma}{r} \right)^{12} - \left( \frac{\sigma}{r} \right)^6 \right] \chi = 0 \quad (\text{B-4})$$

If  $q = \sigma/r$ , then

$$\frac{d^2}{dr^2} + \frac{2}{r} \frac{d}{dr} = \frac{q^4}{\sigma^2} \frac{d^2}{dq^2} \quad (\text{B-5})$$

by a straightforward transformation of derivatives. Then (4) has the form

$$q^4 \frac{d^2 \chi}{dq^2} = \frac{m \sigma^2 4\epsilon \hbar^2}{\hbar^2} (q^{12} - q^6) \chi$$



# THEORY OF THE EARTH'S CRUST

(1.1) The general form of the stress-strain relation is

$$(1.1) \quad \sigma = (1 + \nu) \left( \epsilon - \frac{\nu}{1 + \nu} \epsilon \right)$$

$$(1.2) \quad \frac{\partial \sigma}{\partial x} = \frac{\partial \epsilon}{\partial x} + \frac{\partial \epsilon}{\partial x}$$

$$(1.3) \quad \left[ \frac{\partial \sigma}{\partial x} - \frac{\partial \epsilon}{\partial x} \right] = \frac{\partial \epsilon}{\partial x} + \frac{\partial \epsilon}{\partial x}$$

where  $\sigma$  is the stress and  $\epsilon$  is the strain.

The general form of the stress-strain relation is

in which  $\sigma$  is the stress and  $\epsilon$  is the strain.

(1.4) The general form of the stress-strain relation is

where  $\sigma$  is the stress and  $\epsilon$  is the strain.

$$(1.5) \quad \sigma = (1 + \nu) \left( \epsilon - \frac{\nu}{1 + \nu} \epsilon \right)$$

where  $\sigma$  is the stress and  $\epsilon$  is the strain.

$$(1.6) \quad \frac{\partial \sigma}{\partial x} = \frac{\partial \epsilon}{\partial x} + \frac{\partial \epsilon}{\partial x}$$

where  $\sigma$  is the stress and  $\epsilon$  is the strain.

where

$$= \left( \frac{\partial \sigma}{\partial x} - \frac{\partial \epsilon}{\partial x} \right) = \frac{\partial \epsilon}{\partial x} + \frac{\partial \epsilon}{\partial x}$$

The variable  $q$  will not vanish in the range of interest so we divide by  $q^4$ . We also define  $B = \frac{\pi \sigma^2 4ak}{h^2}$ , as a factor containing all the physical parameters. For  $\text{He}^3$ ,  $B = 16.60$ ; for  $\text{He}^4$ ,  $B = 22.2$ .

We must solve

$$\frac{d^2 x}{dq^2} = B[q^8 - q^2]x. \quad (\text{B-7})$$

We attempt a solution:

$$x = C_0 + C_1 q + C_2 q^2 + C_3 q^3 + \dots \quad (\text{B-8})$$

$$+ C_{-1} q^{-1} + C_{-2} q^{-2} + \dots$$

Putting (B-8) into (B-7), we obtain conditions on the constants:

$$q^{-2}: -1 C_{-1} = B C_{-10} - B C_{-4},$$

$$q^{-1}: 0 = B C_{-7} - B C_{-3}, C_{-1} = 0$$

$$\text{Aug: } 0 = C_{-1}$$

$$q^0: 2 C_2 = B C_{-8} - B C_{-2},$$

$$q^1: 3 \cdot 2 C_3 = B C_{-7} - B C_{-1},$$

$$q^2: 4 \cdot 3 C_4 = B C_{-6} - B C_0,$$

$$q^3: 5 \cdot 4 C_5 = B C_{-5} - B C_1,$$

$$q^4: 6 \cdot 5 C_6 = B C_{-4} - B C_2,$$

and so forth.

We expect the solution to approach a constant value independent of  $q$  at large  $1/q$ . Hence, all the coefficients with negative subscripts

The following is a list of the names of the persons who have been  
 appointed to the various committees of the Board of Directors of the  
 City of New York, for the year ending December 31, 1914.

(1) The Committee on the Administration of the City of New York, consisting of the following members:

(2) The Committee on the Administration of the City of New York, consisting of the following members:

(3) The Committee on the Administration of the City of New York, consisting of the following members:

(4) The Committee on the Administration of the City of New York, consisting of the following members:

must vanish (in other words, we hope to find a function satisfying (7) with  $X = C_0 + C_1 q^1 + C_2 q^2 + \dots$ , without negative powers of  $q$ ).

Setting all the  $C$ 's with negative indices equal to zero, we obtain:

$$C_0 = C_0$$

$$C_6 = 0$$

$$C_1 = C_1$$

$$C_7 = 0$$

$$C_2 = 0$$

$$C_8 = C_0 B^2 / (8 \cdot 7 \cdot 4 \cdot 3)$$

$$C_3 = 0$$

$$C_9 = C_1 B^2 / (9 \cdot 8 \cdot 5 \cdot 4)$$

$$C_4 = -B C_0 / 4 \cdot 3$$

$$C_{10} = C_0 B / (10 \cdot 9)$$

$$C_5 = -B C_1 / 5 \cdot 4$$

$$C_{11} = C_1 B / (11 \cdot 10)$$

$$C_{12} = -\frac{B}{12 \cdot 11} C_8$$

$$C_{14} = \frac{B}{14 \cdot 13} (C_4 - C_{10})$$

$$C_{16} = -\frac{B}{16 \cdot 15} (C_{12})$$

$$C_{18} = \frac{B}{18 \cdot 17} (C_8 - C_{14})$$

$$C_{20} = \frac{B}{20 \cdot 19} (C_{10} - C_{16})$$

$$C_{22} = \frac{B}{22 \cdot 21} (C_{12} - C_{18})$$

$$C_{24} = \frac{B}{24 \cdot 23} (C_{14} - C_{20})$$

$$C_n = \frac{B}{n \cdot (n-1)} (C_{n-10} - C_{n-4}).$$

We shall demonstrate below that the solution carrying the coefficient  $C_1$  is non-physical. Hence we do not display many terms of that solution.

1. The following are the names of the persons who have been appointed as members of the committee to inquire into the charges against the late Mr. X. The names are: Mr. A, Mr. B, Mr. C, Mr. D, Mr. E, Mr. F, Mr. G, Mr. H, Mr. I, Mr. J, Mr. K, Mr. L, Mr. M, Mr. N, Mr. O, Mr. P, Mr. Q, Mr. R, Mr. S, Mr. T, Mr. U, Mr. V, Mr. W, Mr. X, Mr. Y, Mr. Z.

1. Mr. A	2. Mr. B
3. Mr. C	4. Mr. D
5. Mr. E	6. Mr. F
7. Mr. G	8. Mr. H
9. Mr. I	10. Mr. J
11. Mr. K	12. Mr. L
13. Mr. M	14. Mr. N
15. Mr. O	16. Mr. P
17. Mr. Q	18. Mr. R
19. Mr. S	20. Mr. T
21. Mr. U	22. Mr. V
23. Mr. W	24. Mr. X
25. Mr. Y	26. Mr. Z

- 1. Mr. A
- 2. Mr. B
- 3. Mr. C
- 4. Mr. D
- 5. Mr. E
- 6. Mr. F
- 7. Mr. G
- 8. Mr. H
- 9. Mr. I
- 10. Mr. J
- 11. Mr. K
- 12. Mr. L
- 13. Mr. M
- 14. Mr. N
- 15. Mr. O
- 16. Mr. P
- 17. Mr. Q
- 18. Mr. R
- 19. Mr. S
- 20. Mr. T
- 21. Mr. U
- 22. Mr. V
- 23. Mr. W
- 24. Mr. X
- 25. Mr. Y
- 26. Mr. Z

The committee will meet on the 1st day of the month of January, 1900, at the office of the Secretary of the Department of the Interior, Washington, D.C. The committee will have the honor to report to the Secretary of the Department of the Interior on or before the 1st day of the month of February, 1900.



We use the value of  $B$  for  $\text{He}^3$  ( $B = 16.60$ ), and obtain numerical values of the coefficients as follows:

$$\begin{aligned} C_4 &= -1.391 \\ C_8 &= 4.15 \times 10^{-1} \\ C_{10} &= 1.855 \times 10^{-1} \\ C_{12} &= -5.25 \times 10^{-2} \\ C_{14} &= -1.450 \times 10^{-1} \\ C_{16} &= 3.65 \times 10^{-3} \\ C_{18} &= 3.05 \times 10^{-2} \\ C_{20} &= 8.04 \times 10^{-3} \\ C_{22} &= -2.74 \times 10^{-3}. \end{aligned}$$

We can write the solutions as follows:

$$\begin{aligned} \chi &= C_0 F_0(q) + C_1 q F_1(q) \\ F_0 &= 1 - B/(4 \cdot 3) q^4 + B^2/(8 \cdot 7 \cdot 4 \cdot 3) q^8 + B/(10 \cdot 9) q^{10} + \dots \\ F_1 &= 1 - B/(5 \cdot 4) q^4 + B^2/(9 \cdot 8 \cdot 5 \cdot 4) q^8 + B/(11 \cdot 10) q^{10} + \dots \end{aligned}$$

At large  $r$ , the physical situation corresponds to two helium atoms floating in space, with no tendency for relative motion. We, therefore, expect the total flow in or out of a sphere at a large distance to be vanishingly small.

To a low consistent order in  $q$ ,

$$\chi(r) \rightarrow C_0 - C_4 q^4 + C_1 q.$$



$$\begin{aligned}
\text{Total Flux} &= \lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} \int d\Omega \left[ C_0 - \frac{C_4 \sigma^4}{r^4} + C_1 \frac{\sigma}{r} \right] \left( -\frac{4\pi}{r} \right) \frac{1}{r^2} \left[ C_0 - \frac{C_4 \sigma^4}{r^4} \right. \\
&\quad \left. + C_1 \frac{\sigma}{r} \right] r^2 = \lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} -\frac{4\pi 4\pi}{r} \left[ C_0 - \frac{C_4 \sigma^4}{r^4} + C_1 \frac{\sigma}{r} \right] \left[ \frac{C_4 \sigma^4}{r^5} \right. \\
&\quad \left. - \frac{C_1 \sigma}{r^2} \right] r^2 = \lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{4\pi 4\pi}{r} \left[ -C_0 C_1 \sigma - \frac{C_1 \sigma^2}{r} + \frac{C_0 C_4 \sigma^4}{r^3} \right. \\
&\quad \left. + \dots \right] = -\frac{4\pi 4\pi C_0 C_1 \sigma}{r} . \tag{B-9}
\end{aligned}$$

Now, if  $C_0 = 0$ , then  $\chi(\infty) \rightarrow 0$ , in violation of the condition that  $\chi$  not affect the particles at large distances.<sup>a</sup> If  $C_0 \neq 0$ , and if the flux is to vanish, we have the condition

$$C_1 = 0.$$

---

<sup>a</sup>If we have a bounded system, and the  $\phi_i(\bar{r}_i)$  vanish at some finite distance, then the assumption that  $\chi_{ij}(r_{ij} \rightarrow \infty) = 1$  loses its meaning, since the boundary conditions on the  $\phi_i$  will prevent large values of  $r_{ij}$  from occurring. However, for systems with dimensions such that  $V \gg \sigma^3$ , we can assume that we have an unbounded system in setting up the conditions on  $\chi$ . This condition is not restrictive for the many-body case.





## APPENDIX C

### NON-LOCAL AVERAGING

In the theory of Chapter IV, we have need of a non-local average of  $\chi_{1j}^2$ , the square of the correlation function, and of  $\chi_{1j} \nabla_1^2 \chi_{1j}$ , a correlation energy density. In this appendix we derive a general result for the integral

$$\frac{\pi \sqrt{\pi}}{\delta^3} \int e^{-\delta^2 q_j^2} F(r_{1j}) d\vec{r}_k = I(u_{1j}). \quad (C-1)$$

In Fig. 12 we show the coordinates used in evaluating (C-1). Particle  $A_j$  has a displacement  $\vec{q}$  from a lattice point  $j$ . The particle  $A_j$  is described by a probability density proportional to  $e^{-\delta^2 q_j^2}$ . The function  $F(r_{1j})$  is some function which is determined by  $r_{1j}$ , the distance of  $A_j$  from the field point  $i$ . It could be, for example, a potential energy or a correlation function. We assume that  $F$  is a function with a cut off at  $r_0$ :

$$F(r_{1j}) = 0, \quad r_{1j} > r_0 \quad (C-2)$$

or

$$F = F(r_{1j}) \theta(r_{1j} - r_0).$$

In the second expression in (C-2), we have employed the step function to provide the cut off.

The function  $\chi(r_{1j})$  is given by a series expansion in  $c/r$ , which does not converge for  $r < c$ . The function  $\chi(r_{1j})$  is known to decrease continuously from  $r = c$ , and  $\chi(c)$  is very small, so the condition (C-2) is a good description of  $\chi$  for  $r < 2.5 \text{ \AA}$ , and eliminates the problem of non-convergence of  $\chi(c/r)$  in that region.



ANFANGS- UND ENDEKONDITIONEN

Die Anfangsbedingungen sind durch die Anfangswerte  $y_0$  und  $y'_0$  gegeben. Die Endbedingungen sind durch die Werte  $y_1$  und  $y'_1$  gegeben. Die Anfangsbedingungen sind durch die Anfangswerte  $y_0$  und  $y'_0$  gegeben. Die Endbedingungen sind durch die Werte  $y_1$  und  $y'_1$  gegeben.

$$(1.1) \quad y_0 = y_0, \quad y'_0 = y'_0, \quad y_1 = y_1, \quad y'_1 = y'_1$$

Die Anfangsbedingungen sind durch die Anfangswerte  $y_0$  und  $y'_0$  gegeben. Die Endbedingungen sind durch die Werte  $y_1$  und  $y'_1$  gegeben. Die Anfangsbedingungen sind durch die Anfangswerte  $y_0$  und  $y'_0$  gegeben. Die Endbedingungen sind durch die Werte  $y_1$  und  $y'_1$  gegeben.

$$(1.2) \quad y_0 = y_0, \quad y'_0 = y'_0, \quad y_1 = y_1, \quad y'_1 = y'_1$$

Die Anfangsbedingungen sind durch die Anfangswerte  $y_0$  und  $y'_0$  gegeben. Die Endbedingungen sind durch die Werte  $y_1$  und  $y'_1$  gegeben. Die Anfangsbedingungen sind durch die Anfangswerte  $y_0$  und  $y'_0$  gegeben. Die Endbedingungen sind durch die Werte  $y_1$  und  $y'_1$  gegeben.

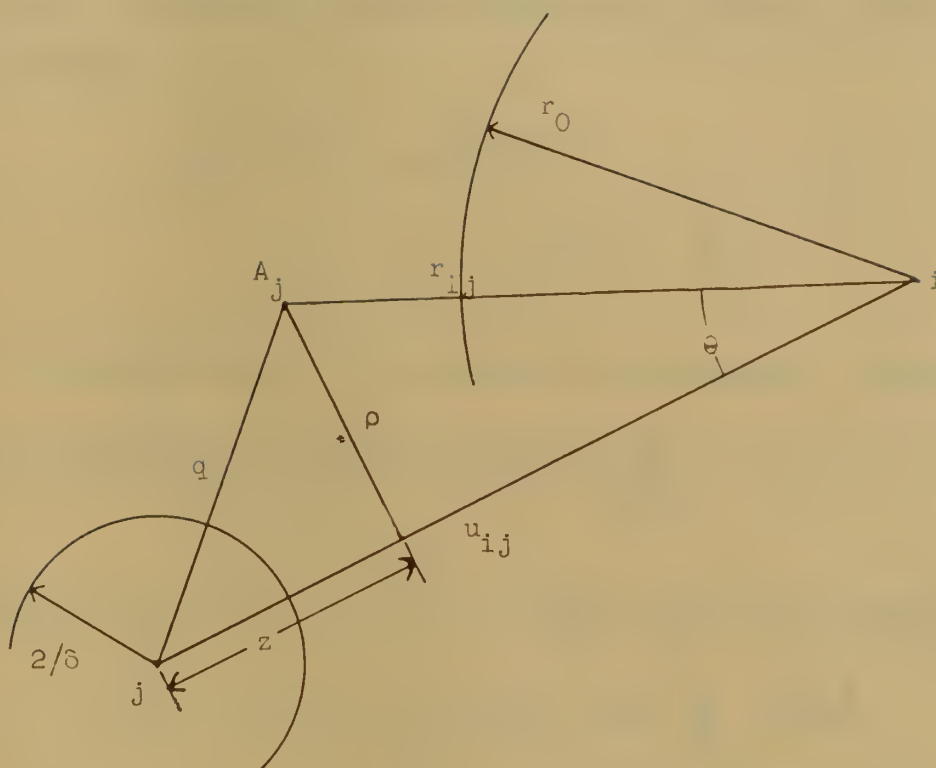


Figure 12. Coordinates for Long Range Averaging Integral



Since we will find that  $P(r_{ij})$  is slowly varying near  $r_{ij} = u_{ij}$  we will expand  $P(r_{ij})$  about the point  $j$ . The resulting expression will be a function of  $u_{ij}$ , the distance from the lattice point  $j$  to the field point  $i$ . Using the auxiliary variables  $z$  and  $\rho$ , to the order shown, we have

$$\begin{aligned} P(r) &= P\left(u - z - \frac{z^2 + \rho^2}{2u}\right) \\ &= P(u) - \left(z + \frac{\rho^2 + z^2}{2u}\right)P' + \frac{z^2}{2}P'' + \dots \end{aligned}$$

We integrate the first two terms of the expansion. First, we have:

$$\begin{aligned} I_1 &= P(u) \int e^{-\delta^2 q^2} \delta(r - r_0) r^2 dr d(\cos \theta) 2\pi \frac{\delta^3}{\pi \sqrt{\pi}} \\ &= 2\pi P(u) \int e^{-\delta^2(u^2 + r^2 - 2ur \cos \theta)} \delta(r - r_0) r^2 dr d \cos \theta \frac{\delta^3}{\pi \sqrt{\pi}}. \end{aligned}$$

We have  $\int_0^\infty e^{-a^2 x^2 + bx} x dx = \frac{1}{2a^2} \left[ e^{-a^2 c^2} e^{ab} + \frac{b}{a} e^{b^2/4a^2} \right]$

$$\times \frac{\sqrt{\pi}}{2} \left[ 1 - \Phi \left( ac - \frac{b}{2a} \right) \right].$$

So, we get

$$\begin{aligned} &P(u) \frac{1}{2u\delta\sqrt{\pi}} \left[ e^{-\delta^2(r_0 - u)} - e^{-\delta^2(r_0 + u)} \right] \\ &+ P(u) \frac{1}{2} [1 - \Phi[\delta(r_0 - u)] + 1 - \Phi[\delta(r_0 + u)]]. \end{aligned}$$

Now, we will find that  $\delta^2 > 1$ ,  $r_0 = 2.5$ , so that  $r_0 + u$  can be considered to be very large, and we get





$$F(u) \left[ \frac{1}{2} [1 + \phi[3(u - r_0)]] + \frac{e^{-3^2(r_0 - u)^2}}{2\sqrt{\pi} 3u} \right].$$

We next consider the term containing  $F'(u)$ . Since we neglected terms with  $[3(r_0 + u)]$  in evaluating the leading term, we are justified in doing so at the outset here, and evaluate

$$\begin{aligned} I_2 &= -F'(u) \int e^{-3^2 q^2} \left( z + \frac{p^2 + z^2}{2u} \right) \phi(u - r_0 - q) dv \frac{3^3}{\pi \sqrt{\pi}} \\ &= -F'(u) \frac{3^3}{u \sqrt{\pi}} \int_{u-r_0}^{\infty} e^{-3^2 q^2} q^4 dq \\ &= -F'(u) \frac{3^3}{u \sqrt{\pi}} \left[ \frac{3 \sqrt{\pi}}{8 \cdot 3^5} [1 + \phi[3(u - r_0)]] + \frac{u - r_0}{26} e^{-3^2(u - r_0)^2} \right. \\ &\quad \left. + \left( \frac{3}{2 \cdot 3^2} + (u - r_0)^2 \right) \right]. \end{aligned}$$

Then

$$\begin{aligned} I_2 &= -F'(u) \left[ \frac{3}{4 \cdot 3^2} [1 + \phi[3(u - r_0)]] + \frac{(u - r_0)}{2 \sqrt{\pi}} [3 + 26(u - r_0)^2] \right. \\ &\quad \left. + e^{-3^2(u - r_0)^2} \right]. \end{aligned}$$

We have the result

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\int e^{-3^2 q^2} F(r) \phi(r - r_0) dv}{\int e^{-3^2 q^2} dv} &= \left[ F(u) + \frac{3 F(u)}{2 \cdot 3^2 u} \right] [1 + \phi[3(u - r_0)]] \frac{1}{2} \\ &\quad + \left[ \frac{F(u)}{2} - F'(u)(u - r_0)(3 + 26(u - r_0)^2) \right] \frac{e^{-3^2(u - r_0)^2}}{2 \sqrt{\pi}} \\ &\quad + O(F''(u)). \end{aligned} \tag{C-3}$$



Equation (C-3) can be used to check the validity of approximations used in evaluating the integral. Ordinarily we will use the leading term.

...the ... of ... and ... of ...

...the ... of ... and ... of ...

...the ... of ...

...the ... of ... and ... of ...

...the ... of ... and ... of ...

...the ... of ... and ... of ...

...the ... of ... and ... of ...

...the ... of ... and ... of ...

...the ... of ... and ... of ...

...the ... of ... and ... of ...

...the ... of ... and ... of ...

...the ... of ... and ... of ...

...the ... of ... and ... of ...

...the ... of ... and ... of ...

...the ... of ... and ... of ...

...the ... of ... and ... of ...

## APPENDIX D

### CALCULATION OF THE TERMS OF THE EXPONENTIAL SUM

We calculate  $\epsilon_\lambda = \epsilon_{\lambda 0} + \epsilon_{\lambda 1} + \epsilon_{\lambda 2}$ , where

$$\epsilon_\lambda = \left[ \frac{1}{u} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{d}{du} \right] \frac{f'}{f} \Big|_{u=u_\lambda} \quad (D-1)$$

from Eq. IV-(17). For  $f$ , we have

$$f = \frac{1}{2} \chi^2(u) [1 + \phi(\delta(u - r_0))] + O \left[ \left( \frac{\chi \chi'}{\delta^2 u} \right), \left( \frac{\chi^2}{\delta u} e^{-\delta^2(u - r_0)^2} \right) \right] \quad (D-2)$$

For values of  $u$  which we consider, the second term is always much smaller than the first, so that the denominator of  $f'/f$  can be taken to be the leading term of (D-2).

We define  $f_\chi = \chi^2(u)$ ,  $f_\delta = \frac{1}{2}[1 + \phi(\delta(u - r_0))]$ . Excluding  $r_0$  terms of order  $\frac{\chi \chi'}{\delta^2 u}$ , we have

$$\frac{f'}{f} \approx \frac{(f_\chi f_\delta)'}{f_\chi f_\delta} = \frac{f'_\chi}{f_\chi} + \frac{f'_\delta}{f_\delta}.$$

The first of these in (D-1) gives  $\epsilon_{\lambda 0}$ ; the second contributes to  $\epsilon_{\lambda 1}$ . The correction term,  $\epsilon_{\lambda 2}$  is of higher order in  $1/\delta$  and  $\chi'$ , and accordingly neglected. First, we use the series expansion representation for  $\chi$



# THEORY OF THE EARTH'S CRUST

Let  $\rho$  be the density of the crust,  $\rho_0$  the density of the mantle, and  $\rho_1$  the density of the core.

$$(1) \quad \rho \left[ \frac{4}{3} \pi R^3 - \frac{4}{3} \pi r^3 \right] = \rho_0 \left[ \frac{4}{3} \pi r^3 \right]$$

where  $R$  is the radius of the Earth, and  $r$  is the radius of the core.

$$(2) \quad \rho \left[ \frac{4}{3} \pi R^3 - \frac{4}{3} \pi r^3 \right] = \rho_1 \left[ \frac{4}{3} \pi r^3 \right]$$

$$(3) \quad \rho \left[ \frac{4}{3} \pi R^3 - \frac{4}{3} \pi r^3 \right] = \rho_0 \left[ \frac{4}{3} \pi r^3 \right] + \rho_1 \left[ \frac{4}{3} \pi r^3 \right]$$

From (1) and (2) we can find the ratio of the radii of the core and the Earth. From (3) we can find the ratio of the densities of the mantle and the core.

$$\frac{\rho_1}{\rho_0} = \frac{\rho \left[ \frac{4}{3} \pi R^3 - \frac{4}{3} \pi r^3 \right]}{\rho \left[ \frac{4}{3} \pi r^3 \right]} = \frac{R^3 - r^3}{r^3} = \frac{R^3}{r^3} - 1$$

$$\frac{R^3}{r^3} = \frac{\rho_1}{\rho_0} + 1$$

From (1) and (2) we can find the ratio of the radii of the core and the Earth. From (3) we can find the ratio of the densities of the mantle and the core.

$$x = 1 - \frac{B \sigma^4}{12 r^4} + \frac{B^2 \sigma^6}{56 \cdot 12 r^6} + \frac{B \sigma^{10}}{90 r^{10}} - \frac{B^3 \sigma^{12}}{121 \cdot 56 \cdot 12 r^{12}} + \dots \quad (D-4)$$

Noting that  $r'_x/r_x = x'^2/x^2 = 2 x'/x$ , we get

$$\frac{r'_x}{r_x} = \frac{2 B \sigma^4}{r^5} \left[ \frac{1}{3} + \frac{B \sigma^4}{r^4} \frac{1}{9 \cdot 7} - \frac{\sigma^6}{9 r^6} + \frac{2}{33 \cdot 63} \frac{B^2 \sigma^8}{r^8} + \dots \right],$$

by differentiating (D-4), and then dividing by  $x$ . We next form  $[1/u + 1/2 d/du] r'/r$ , getting

$$\epsilon_{\lambda 0,1} = - \frac{B \sigma^4}{r^6} \left[ 1 + \frac{B \sigma^4}{9 r^4} - \frac{\sigma^6}{r^6} + \frac{B^2 \sigma^8}{r^8} \frac{2}{105} + \dots \right]. \quad (D-5)$$

As a check on (D-5), we can also use the Yukawa representation for  $x$ ,  $x = 1 - (r_0/r) \exp(-\gamma(r - r_0))$ .

$$\frac{2 x'}{x} = \frac{2e^{-\gamma(u-r_0)} \left[ \frac{1+\gamma u}{u} \right] \frac{r_0}{u}}{1 - \frac{r_0}{u} e^{-\gamma(u-r_0)}} = \frac{2(1+\gamma u)}{u} \frac{[1-x]}{x}.$$

$$\text{Now, } \frac{d}{du} \frac{1-x}{x} = \frac{x(-x') - (1-x)x'}{x^2} = - \frac{x'}{x^2},$$

and

$$x' = \frac{1+\gamma u}{u} (1-x).$$

Therefore,

$$\epsilon_{\lambda 0,2} = - \frac{1-x}{x u^2} \left[ \frac{(1+\gamma u)^2}{x} - (1+2\gamma u) \right]. \quad (D-6)$$

We obtain the correction term  $\epsilon_{\lambda 1}$  by writing out  $r'$  to second order: From the result of Appendix C, if we call  $F(r_{1j}) = x^2(r_{1j})$ , then



$$\begin{aligned}
r_1 &= (\text{const}) \int e^{-\delta^2 q^2} x^2(r_{1j}) dr_j \\
&= \left( x^2(u) - \frac{3}{\delta^2 u} x'x \right) [1 + \phi(\delta(u - r_0))]^{\frac{1}{2}} \\
&\quad + \left( \frac{x^2(u)}{\delta u} - x'x(2) (u - r_0)(3 + 2\delta(u - r_0)^2) \right) \frac{e^{-\delta^2(u - r_0)^2}}{2\sqrt{\pi}}
\end{aligned}$$

Excluding terms from  $r'$  like  $x'x e^{-\delta^2(u - r_0)^2} (u - r_0)$  and  $x''x$ , we have for the terms in  $x^2$  and the leading terms in  $x'x$

$$\begin{aligned}
r' &= 2 x x' [1 + \phi(\delta(u - r_0))]^{\frac{1}{2}} \\
&\quad + [x^2] \frac{\delta}{\sqrt{\pi}} e^{-\delta^2(u - r_0)^2} + \left[ -\frac{x^2}{\delta u^2} \right] \frac{1}{2\sqrt{\pi}} e^{-\delta^2(u - r_0)^2} \\
&\quad + \left[ \frac{x^2}{\delta u} \right] \frac{(\delta^2(u - r_0)^2)}{2\sqrt{\pi}} e^{-\delta^2(u - r_0)^2} + \text{smaller terms.}
\end{aligned}$$

Hence the leading terms in  $r'$  are

$$\begin{aligned}
r' &= x'x [1 + \phi(\delta(u - r_0))] \\
&\quad + \frac{x^2 e^{-\delta^2(u - r_0)^2}}{\sqrt{\pi}} \left( \delta - \delta + \frac{\delta r_0}{u} - \frac{1}{\delta u^2} \right).
\end{aligned}$$

So that

$$G_{A1} = \left[ \frac{1}{u} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{d}{du} \right] \frac{e^{-\delta^2(u - r_0)^2} \left( \frac{\delta r_0}{u} - \frac{1}{2\delta u^2} \right)}{\sqrt{\pi} [1 + \phi(\delta(u - r_0))]}$$

If we exclude terms with  $\exp(-2\delta^2(u - r_0)^2)$ , we get





$$\begin{aligned} \zeta_{\lambda 1} = & \frac{e^{-\delta^2(u-r_0)^2}}{\sqrt{\pi}(1+\phi[\delta(u-r_0)])} \left[ \frac{\delta r_0}{u^2} - \frac{1}{2\delta u^3} + \frac{1}{2} \left[ \left( \frac{\delta r_0}{u} - \frac{1}{2\delta u^2} \right) \left( -2\delta^2(u-r_0) \right) \right] \right. \\ & \left. - \frac{\delta r_0}{u^2} + \frac{3}{2\delta u^3} \right] \approx - \frac{e^{-\delta^2(u-r_0)^2}}{\sqrt{\pi}(1+\phi[\delta(u-r_0)])} \left( \frac{\delta^3 r_0(u-r_0)}{2u} \right) \quad (D-7) \end{aligned}$$

In arriving at this correction term, we find that all the contributions in  $\delta$  to the leading term in  $f'$  have cancelled with terms from the second term in  $f'$ . This correction term in  $\delta$  arises from the cut off in  $\chi^2$ . There is also a correction term arising from the slope of  $\chi^2$  in the region where the Gaussian  $\exp(-\delta^2 q^2)$  is large, but this term is of order  $\left( \frac{\chi \chi'}{u} \right)' / \delta^2$ , compared to  $\chi^2$ , and we have discarded a term of this order in arriving at (D-7). We will use the correction term (D-7), but consider our uncertainty in results to be of the order of the change in results brought about by (D-7).



# APPENDIX B

## SAMPLE CALCULATION OF $\delta^2$

We illustrate the method used in constructing Fig. 6 by evaluating the points at  $a = 3.6 \text{ \AA}$ .

We first evaluate the sum  $\sum_{\lambda} \frac{n_{\lambda} \epsilon_{\lambda 0}}{3}$  using the series expansion form of IV-(37) plotten in Fig. 5.

$\lambda$	$n_{\lambda}$	$R_{\lambda}/a$	$R_{\lambda}$	$\epsilon_{\lambda 0}$ (Fig. 5)	$\frac{n_{\lambda} \epsilon_{\lambda 0}}{3}$
1	8	1.0	3.60	0.490	1.31
2	6	1.154	4.16	0.18	0.36
3	12	1.637	5.89	0.017	0.07
4	24	1.918	6.80	0.0076	0.06
5	3	2.0	7.20	0.0052	0.01
6	6	2.315	8.31	0.0022	
7	24	2.480	8.93		
					<hr/> 1.81

We now calculate the correction term  $\sum_{\lambda} \frac{n_{\lambda}}{3} \epsilon_{\lambda 1}$ . Assume that  $\delta^2 = 1.88$ ,  $r_0 = 2.5$

$$\epsilon_{\lambda 1} = - \frac{-\delta^2 (R_{\lambda} - r_0)^2}{\sqrt{\pi(1 + 0.6[R_{\lambda} - r_0])}} \cdot \frac{\delta^3 r_0 (R_{\lambda} - r_0)}{2 R_{\lambda}}$$

$$= - \frac{.102 \cdot 2.58 \cdot 2.5 \cdot 1.1}{1.73 \cdot 2.0 \cdot 2 \cdot 3.6} = .029; .029 \times \frac{8}{3} = .077$$

$$\delta^2 = 1.81 + .077 = 1.89 \text{ check.}$$

# 2. Example

## 3. Example 2.1

Example 2.1: Let  $X$  be a random variable with probability mass function

$$P(X=x) = \frac{1}{2^x} \quad \text{for } x=1,2,3,\dots$$

Find the expected value of  $X$ .

$$E(X) = \sum_{x=1}^{\infty} x \cdot P(X=x)$$

$x$	$P(X=x)$	$x \cdot P(X=x)$	$x^2 \cdot P(X=x)$	$x^3 \cdot P(X=x)$	$x^4 \cdot P(X=x)$
1	$\frac{1}{2}$	$\frac{1}{2}$	$\frac{1}{2}$	$\frac{1}{2}$	$\frac{1}{2}$
2	$\frac{1}{4}$	$\frac{2}{4}$	$\frac{4}{4}$	$\frac{8}{4}$	$\frac{16}{4}$
3	$\frac{1}{8}$	$\frac{3}{8}$	$\frac{9}{8}$	$\frac{27}{8}$	$\frac{81}{8}$
4	$\frac{1}{16}$	$\frac{4}{16}$	$\frac{16}{16}$	$\frac{64}{16}$	$\frac{256}{16}$
5	$\frac{1}{32}$	$\frac{5}{32}$	$\frac{25}{32}$	$\frac{125}{32}$	$\frac{625}{32}$
6	$\frac{1}{64}$	$\frac{6}{64}$	$\frac{36}{64}$	$\frac{216}{64}$	$\frac{1296}{64}$
7	$\frac{1}{128}$	$\frac{7}{128}$	$\frac{49}{128}$	$\frac{343}{128}$	$\frac{2401}{128}$
8	$\frac{1}{256}$	$\frac{8}{256}$	$\frac{64}{256}$	$\frac{512}{256}$	$\frac{4096}{256}$
9	$\frac{1}{512}$	$\frac{9}{512}$	$\frac{81}{512}$	$\frac{729}{512}$	$\frac{6561}{512}$
10	$\frac{1}{1024}$	$\frac{10}{1024}$	$\frac{100}{1024}$	$\frac{1000}{1024}$	$\frac{10000}{1024}$
11	$\frac{1}{2048}$	$\frac{11}{2048}$	$\frac{121}{2048}$	$\frac{1331}{2048}$	$\frac{14641}{2048}$
12	$\frac{1}{4096}$	$\frac{12}{4096}$	$\frac{144}{4096}$	$\frac{1728}{4096}$	$\frac{20736}{4096}$
13	$\frac{1}{8192}$	$\frac{13}{8192}$	$\frac{169}{8192}$	$\frac{2197}{8192}$	$\frac{28541}{8192}$
14	$\frac{1}{16384}$	$\frac{14}{16384}$	$\frac{196}{16384}$	$\frac{2744}{16384}$	$\frac{37324}{16384}$
15	$\frac{1}{32768}$	$\frac{15}{32768}$	$\frac{225}{32768}$	$\frac{3375}{32768}$	$\frac{50625}{32768}$
16	$\frac{1}{65536}$	$\frac{16}{65536}$	$\frac{256}{65536}$	$\frac{4096}{65536}$	$\frac{65536}{65536}$
17	$\frac{1}{131072}$	$\frac{17}{131072}$	$\frac{289}{131072}$	$\frac{4913}{131072}$	$\frac{83521}{131072}$
18	$\frac{1}{262144}$	$\frac{18}{262144}$	$\frac{324}{262144}$	$\frac{5832}{262144}$	$\frac{104976}{262144}$
19	$\frac{1}{524288}$	$\frac{19}{524288}$	$\frac{361}{524288}$	$\frac{6859}{524288}$	$\frac>129679}{524288}$
20	$\frac{1}{1048576}$	$\frac{20}{1048576}$	$\frac{400}{1048576}$	$\frac{8000}{1048576}$	$\frac>160000}{1048576}$
21	$\frac{1}{2097152}$	$\frac{21}{2097152}$	$\frac{441}{2097152}$	$\frac{9261}{2097152}$	$\frac>194481}{2097152}$
22	$\frac{1}{4194304}$	$\frac{22}{4194304}$	$\frac{484}{4194304}$	$\frac>10648$	$\frac>131204$
23	$\frac{1}{8388608}$	$\frac{23}{8388608}$	$\frac{529}{8388608}$	$\frac>12167$	$\frac>152473$
24	$\frac{1}{16777216}$	$\frac{24}{16777216}$	$\frac{576}{16777216}$	$\frac>13824$	$\frac>177144$
25	$\frac{1}{33554432}$	$\frac{25}{33554432}$	$\frac{625}{33554432}$	$\frac>15625$	$\frac>197775$
26	$\frac{1}{67108864}$	$\frac{26}{67108864}$	$\frac{676}{67108864}$	$\frac>17714$	$\frac>218176$
27	$\frac{1}{134217728}$	$\frac{27}{134217728}$	$\frac{729}{134217728}$	$\frac>19967$	$\frac>241673$
28	$\frac{1}{268435456}$	$\frac{28}{268435456}$	$\frac{784}{268435456}$	$\frac>22576$	$\frac>268432$
29	$\frac{1}{536870912}$	$\frac{29}{536870912}$	$\frac{841}{536870912}$	$\frac>25419$	$\frac>297969$
30	$\frac{1}{1073741824}$	$\frac{30}{1073741824}$	$\frac{900}{1073741824}$	$\frac>28500$	$\frac>330000$
31	$\frac{1}{2147483648}$	$\frac{31}{2147483648}$	$\frac{961}{2147483648}$	$\frac>31831$	$\frac>364671$
32	$\frac{1}{4294967296}$	$\frac{32}{4294967296}$	$\frac{1024}{4294967296}$	$\frac>35392$	$\frac>401728$
33	$\frac{1}{8589934592}$	$\frac{33}{8589934592}$	$\frac>1089$	$\frac>39189$	$\frac>441129$
34	$\frac{1}{17179869184}$	$\frac{34}{17179869184}$	$\frac>1156$	$\frac>43228$	$\frac>482076$
35	$\frac{1}{34359738368}$	$\frac{35}{34359738368}$	$\frac>1225$	$\frac>47515$	$\frac>524575$
36	$\frac{1}{68719476736}$	$\frac{36}{68719476736}$	$\frac>1296$	$\frac>52044$	$\frac>568704$
37	$\frac{1}{137438953472}$	$\frac{37}{137438953472}$	$\frac>1369$	$\frac>56811$	$\frac>614473$
38	$\frac{1}{274877906944}$	$\frac{38}{274877906944}$	$\frac>1444$	$\frac>61828$	$\frac>661896$
39	$\frac{1}{549755813888}$	$\frac{39}{549755813888}$	$\frac>1521$	$\frac>67099$	$\frac>711171$
40	$\frac{1}{1099511627776}$	$\frac{40}{1099511627776}$	$\frac>1600$	$\frac>72640$	$\frac>762400$
41	$\frac{1}{2199023255552}$	$\frac{41}{2199023255552}$	$\frac>1681$	$\frac>78459$	$\frac>815691$
42	$\frac{1}{4398046511104}$	$\frac{42}{4398046511104}$	$\frac>1764$	$\frac>84564$	$\frac>871136$
43	$\frac{1}{8796093022208}$	$\frac{43}{8796093022208}$	$\frac>1849$	$\frac>90961$	$\frac>928775$
44	$\frac{1}{17592186044416}$	$\frac{44}{17592186044416}$	$\frac>1936$	$\frac>97664$	$\frac>988608$
45	$\frac{1}{35184372088832}$	$\frac{45}{35184372088832}$	$\frac>2025$	$\frac>104675$	$\frac>1050725$
46	$\frac{1}{70368744177664}$	$\frac{46}{70368744177664}$	$\frac>2116$	$\frac>111996$	$\frac>1115176$
47	$\frac{1}{140737488355328}$	$\frac{47}{140737488355328}$	$\frac>2209$	$\frac>119631$	$\frac>1182969$
48	$\frac{1}{281474976710656}$	$\frac{48}{281474976710656}$	$\frac>2304$	$\frac>127584$	$\frac>1253216$
49	$\frac{1}{562949953421312}$	$\frac{49}{562949953421312}$	$\frac>2401$	$\frac>135859$	$\frac>1325925$
50	$\frac{1}{1125899906842624}$	$\frac{50}{1125899906842624}$	$\frac>2500$	$\frac>144400$	$\frac>1400000$
51	$\frac{1}{2251799813685248}$	$\frac{51}{2251799813685248}$	$\frac>2601$	$\frac>153219$	$\frac>1476471$
52	$\frac{1}{4503599627370496}$	$\frac{52}{4503599627370496}$	$\frac>2704$	$\frac>162312$	$\frac>1555396$
53	$\frac{1}{9007199254740992}$	$\frac{53}{9007199254740992}$	$\frac>2809$	$\frac>171681$	$\frac>1636775$
54	$\frac{1}{18014398509481984}$	$\frac{54}{18014398509481984}$	$\frac>2916$	$\frac>181320$	$\frac>1720608$
55	$\frac{1}{36028797018963968}$	$\frac{55}{36028797018963968}$	$\frac>3025$	$\frac>191235$	$\frac>1806975$
56	$\frac{1}{72057594037927936}$	$\frac{56}{72057594037927936}$	$\frac>3136$	$\frac>201432$	$\frac>1895888$
57	$\frac{1}{144115188075855872}$	$\frac{57}{144115188075855872}$	$\frac>3249$	$\frac>211905$	$\frac>1987359$
58	$\frac{1}{288230376151711744}$	$\frac{58}{288230376151711744}$	$\frac>3364$	$\frac>222648$	$\frac>2081488$
59	$\frac{1}{576460752303423488}$	$\frac{59}{576460752303423488}$	$\frac>3481$	$\frac>233665$	$\frac>2178275$
60	$\frac{1}{1152921504606846976}$	$\frac{60}{1152921504606846976}$	$\frac>3600$	$\frac>244960$	$\frac>2277720$
61	$\frac{1}{2305843009213693952}$	$\frac{61}{2305843009213693952}$	$\frac>3721$	$\frac>256527$	$\frac>2379931$
62	$\frac{1}{4611686018427387904}$	$\frac{62}{4611686018427387904}$	$\frac>3844$	$\frac>268368$	$\frac>2484976$
63	$\frac{1}{9223372036854775808}$	$\frac{63}{9223372036854775808}$	$\frac>3969$	$\frac>280485$	$\frac>2592855$
64	$\frac{1}{18446744073709551616}$	$\frac{64}{18446744073709551616}$	$\frac>4096$	$\frac>292864$	$\frac>2703584$
65	$\frac{1}{36893488147419103232}$	$\frac{65}{36893488147419103232}$	$\frac>4225$	$\frac>305505$	$\frac>2817165$
66	$\frac{1}{73786976294838206464}$	$\frac{66}{73786976294838206464}$	$\frac>4356$	$\frac>318408$	$\frac>2933696$
67	$\frac{1}{147573952589676412928}$	$\frac{67}{147573952589676412928}$	$\frac>4489$	$\frac>331567$	$\frac>3053275$
68	$\frac{1}{295147905179352825856}$	$\frac{68}{295147905179352825856}$	$\frac>4624$	$\frac>344984$	$\frac>3175904$
69	$\frac{1}{590295810358705651712}$	$\frac{69}{590295810358705651712}$	$\frac>4761$	$\frac>358661$	$\frac>3301585$
70	$\frac{1}{1180591620717411303424}$	$\frac{70}{1180591620717411303424}$	$\frac>4900$	$\frac>372592$	$\frac>3430320$
71	$\frac{1}{2361183241434822606848}$	$\frac{71}{2361183241434822606848}$	$\frac>5041$	$\frac>386781$	$\frac>3562125$
72	$\frac{1}{4722366482869645213696}$	$\frac{72}{4722366482869645213696}$	$\frac>5184$	$\frac>401220$	$\frac>3697088$
73	$\frac{1}{9444732965739290427392}$	$\frac{73}{9444732965739290427392}$	$\frac>5329$	$\frac>415911$	$\frac>3835215$
74	$\frac{1}{18889465931478580854784}$	$\frac{74}{18889465931478580854784}$	$\frac>5476$	$\frac>430848$	$\frac>3976528$
75	$\frac{1}{37778931862957161709568}$	$\frac{75}{37778931862957161709568}$	$\frac>5625$	$\frac>446035$	$\frac>4120945$
76	$\frac{1}{75557863725914323419136}$	$\frac{76}{75557863725914323419136}$	$\frac>5776$	$\frac>461472$	$\frac>4268464$
77	$\frac{1}{151115727451828646838272}$	$\frac{77}{151115727451828646838272}$	$\frac>5929$	$\frac>477161$	$\frac>4419095$
78	$\frac{1}{302231454903657293676544}$	$\frac{78}{302231454903657293676544}$	$\frac>6084$	$\frac>493104$	$\frac>4572928$
79	$\frac{1}{604462909807314587353088}$	$\frac{79}{604462909807314587353088}$	$\frac>6241$	$\frac>509305$	$\frac>4730065$
80	$\frac{1}{1208925819614629174706176}$	$\frac{80}{1208925819614629174706176}$	$\frac>6400$	$\frac>525760$	$\frac>4890496$
81	$\frac{1}{2417851639229258349412352}$	$\frac{81}{2417851639229258349412352}$	$\frac>6561$	$\frac>542471$	$\frac>5054225$
82	$\frac{1}{4835703278458516698824704}$	$\frac{82}{4835703278458516698824704}$	$\frac>6724$	$\frac>559440$	$\frac>5221368$
83	$\frac{1}{9671406556917033397649408}$	$\frac{83}{9671406556917033397649408}$	$\frac>6889$	$\frac>576669$	$\frac>5391925$
84	$\frac{1}{19342813113834066795298816}$	$\frac{84}{19342813113834066795298816}$	$\frac>7056$	$\frac>594152$	$\frac>5565984$
85	$\frac{1}{38685626227668133590597632}$	$\frac{85}{38685626227668133590597632}$	$\frac>7225$	$\frac>611885$	$\frac>5743545$
86	$\frac{1}{77371252455336267181195264}$	$\frac{86}{77371252455336267181195264}$	$\frac>7396$	$\frac>629872$	$\frac>5924608$
87	$\frac{1}{154742504910672534362390528}$	$\frac{87}{154742504910672534362390528}$	$\frac>7569$	$\frac>648109$	$\frac>6109175$
88	$\frac{1}{309485009821345068724781056}$	$\frac{88}{309485009821345068724781056}$	$\frac>7744$	$\frac>666592$	$\frac>6297248$
89	$\frac{1}{618970019642690137449562112}$	$\frac{89}{618970019642690137449562112}$	$\frac>7921$	$\frac>685315$	$\frac>6488925$
90	$\frac{1}{1237940039285380274899124224}$	$\frac{90}{1237940039285380274899124224}$	$\frac>8100$	$\frac>704272$	$\frac>6684196$
91	$\frac{1}{2475880078570760549798248448}$	$\frac{91}{2475880078570760549798248448}$	$\frac>8281$	$\frac>723469$	$\frac>6883065$
92	$\frac{1}{4951760157141521099596496896}$	$\frac{92}{4951760157141521099596496896}$	$\frac>8464$	$\frac>742904$	$\frac>7085536$
93	$\frac{1}{9903520314283042199192993792}$	$\frac{93}{9903520314283042199192993792}$	$\frac>8649$	$\frac>762575$	$\frac>7291615$
94	$\frac{1}{19807040628566084398385987584}$	$\frac{94}{19807040628566084398385987584}$	$\frac>8836$	$\frac>782480$	$\frac>7501304$
95	$\frac{1}{39614081257132168796771975168}$	$\frac{95}{39614081257132168796771975168}$	$\frac>9025$	$\frac>802615$	$\frac>7714595$
96	$\frac{1}{79228162514264337593543950336}$	$\frac{96}{79228162514264337593543950336}$	$\frac>9216$	$\frac>822976$	$\frac>7931488$
97	$\frac{1}{158456325028528675187087900672}$	$\frac{97}{158456325028528675187087900672}$	$\frac>9409$	$\frac>843559$	$\frac>8151985$
98	$\frac{1}{3169126500570573503$				

## APPENDIX F

### THE CONTRIBUTION TO THE ENERGY OF THE PLUVIAGE PERTURBATION

We consider the term in IV(43) which gives the energy of the Pluvage Perturbation

$$\begin{aligned} \Pi_{1j} = & - \frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \nabla^2 \vec{c}_{1j} \cdot \vec{\nabla} c_{0,1j} \frac{1}{r_{1j}} \frac{\partial}{\partial r_{1j}} \\ & - \sum_k \frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \frac{\vec{c}_{1j} \cdot \vec{c}_{1k}}{r_{1j} r_{1k}} \frac{\partial^2}{\partial r_{1j} \partial r_{1k}} \end{aligned} \quad (F-1)$$

Then, neglecting exchange effects  $\langle \sum_k \Pi'_{pk} \rangle =$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{A} \sum_{p,k} \int d\vec{x}_p d\vec{x}_k \Pi'_{pk} & \left[ \frac{1}{2} \sum_{1,j} \phi_j^*(p) \phi_j(p) \phi_1^*(k) \phi_1(k) \right] \\ \chi_{pk}(r'_{pk}) \chi_{pk}(r_{pk}) \sum_p \sum_k & \left[ \frac{\Pi}{t/p,k} |\phi_t(t)|^2 \right] \left[ \frac{\Pi}{t, r/p,k} \chi_{rt}^2 \chi_{pt}^2 \chi_{kt}^2 d\vec{x}_t \right] \end{aligned} \quad (F-2)$$

with

$$\begin{aligned} A = \int \sum_p \sum_k & \left[ \frac{\Pi}{t} |\phi_t(t)|^2 \right] \frac{\Pi}{t > r} \chi_{rt}^2 d\vec{x}_t \\ = \int d\vec{x}_p \sum_j & |\phi_j(p)|^2 \sum_k \int r(k) \chi_{pk}^2 a(\frac{p}{r}) \end{aligned} \quad (F-3)$$

We use the single particle density matrix to represent all the particles except  $p$  and  $k$ :



PROBLEM 1. (10 points)

Let  $\mathcal{H}$  be a Hilbert space and let  $\{e_n\}_{n=1}^\infty$  be an orthonormal basis for  $\mathcal{H}$ .

Define the operator  $T$  on  $\mathcal{H}$  by

$$T e_n = \frac{1}{n} e_n, \quad n = 1, 2, \dots$$

$$(10a) \quad \text{Compute } \|T\| \text{ and } \|T^{-1}\|.$$

$$(10b) \quad \text{Compute } \langle T e_n, T e_n \rangle.$$

$$(10c) \quad \text{Compute } \langle T e_n, e_n \rangle.$$

$$(10d) \quad \text{Compute } \langle T e_n, T e_m \rangle.$$

2020

$$(10e) \quad \text{Compute } \langle T e_n, T e_m \rangle.$$

$$(10f) \quad \text{Compute } \langle T e_n, T e_m \rangle.$$

Let  $\mathcal{H}$  be a Hilbert space and let  $\{e_n\}_{n=1}^\infty$  be an orthonormal basis for  $\mathcal{H}$ .

Define the operator  $T$  on  $\mathcal{H}$  by

$$\langle \sum_{p,k} \Pi_{pk} \rangle = \frac{1}{\Lambda} \sum_{p,k} \int d\vec{x}_p d\vec{x}_k \Pi'_{pk} \left[ \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i,j} \phi_i^*(p') \phi_i(p) \phi_j^*(k') \phi_j(k) \right]$$

$$\chi_{pk}(r'_{pk}) \chi_{pk}(r_{pk}) \prod_{t/k,p} \int \gamma_t(t) \chi_{pt}^2 \chi_{kt}^2 d\vec{x}_t. \quad (F-4)$$

In (F-4), the product over  $t$  is non-diagonal so that  $\Pi'_{pk}$  may operate.

We now present an argument that the numerator of (F-4) vanishes to lowest order in the energy, in a Bravais lattice. Let us consider atoms 1, 2, and 3 arranged on lattice sites 1, 2, and 3 in one of the lines that define the Bravais lattice. We have for their contribution to  $\Pi'$ , from the first term in  $\Pi'$

$$\begin{aligned} \left[ \Pi'(1) \right]_{123} &= \text{Const} \int dx_1 dx_2 (x_1 - x_2) \left( \frac{\partial}{\partial x_1} - \frac{\partial}{\partial x_2} \right) |f(r_{12})| g(1,2) \\ &+ \text{Const} \int dx_2 dx_3 (x_2 - x_3) \left( \frac{\partial}{\partial x_2} - \frac{\partial}{\partial x_3} \right) |f(r_{23})| f(2,3) \end{aligned} \quad (F-5)$$

Here  $|f(r_{12})| = \chi(r_{12}) \chi'(r_{12})/r_{12}$ , and

$$\begin{aligned} g(1,j) = g(j,1) &= \sum_{k,m} \phi_k^2(1) \phi_m^2(j) \prod_{p \neq 1,j} \int \gamma(p) \chi_{ip}^2(r_{ip}) \\ &\chi_{jp}^2(r_{jp}) d\vec{x}_p. \end{aligned}$$

In (F-5), we have put the  $x$  axis along the line joining the lattice sites, and assume cylindrical symmetry, so that  $y_1 = y_2$  and  $z_1 = z_2$  average to zero.



We exclude the derivatives  $\frac{\partial}{\partial x_1}$  and  $\frac{\partial}{\partial x_3}$  from consideration, because they will appear in other pairs of equations. In (F-5),  $x_2$  describes the position of the same particle simultaneously in both integrals. We therefore take  $x_1 > x_2 > x_3$ .

We estimate the value of (F-5) by writing the integrals in the numerator in the same form as the normalization integral, by assigning estimated values to the operators and expressions there.

$$\begin{aligned} \left[ \Pi'_{(1)} \right]_{123} &= -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \left( \int dx_2 \left[ \int dx_1 [a + x'_1 - x'_2] \left( -\frac{\partial}{\partial x_2} \right) |f(r_{12})| g(1,2) \right. \right. \\ &\quad \left. \left. + \int dx_3 [-a + x'_3 - x'_2] \left( -\frac{\partial}{\partial x_2} \right) |f(r_{32})| g(2,3) \right] \right) \\ &= \left( \int dx_2 dx_1 x_{12}^2 g(1,2) \right)^{-1}. \end{aligned} \quad (F-6)$$

In (F-6), we have taken advantage of the fact that on the average  $x_1$ ,  $x_2$  and  $x_3$  are at their lattice sites.

The parts of the integral containing  $a$  vanish as the difference of two equal quantities. The integrals containing  $x'_1$  and  $x'_3$  vanish because  $x'_1$  and  $x'_3$  are odd functions.

We are therefore left with

$$\begin{aligned} \left[ \Pi'_{(1)} \right]_{123} &= -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \left( \int dx_2 \left[ \int dx_1 [x'_2 \frac{\partial}{\partial x_2} |f(r_{12})| g(1,2) \right. \right. \\ &\quad \left. \left. + \int dx_3 x'_2 \frac{\partial}{\partial x_2} |f(r_{32})| g(2,3) \right] \right) \left( \int dx_1 dx_2 x_{12}^2 g(1,2) \right)^{-1} \end{aligned} \quad (F-7)$$

We now assign estimated values to the quantities in the integral of the numerator:

It is known that the function  $f(x)$  is continuous on the interval  $[a, b]$ .

Let  $f(x)$  be a function defined on the interval  $[a, b]$  and let  $f(x)$  be continuous on  $[a, b]$ .

Then the function  $f(x)$  is continuous on the interval  $[a, b]$  and the function  $f(x)$  is continuous on  $[a, b]$ .

Let  $f(x)$  be a function defined on the interval  $[a, b]$  and let  $f(x)$  be continuous on  $[a, b]$ .

Then the function  $f(x)$  is continuous on the interval  $[a, b]$  and the function  $f(x)$  is continuous on  $[a, b]$ .

Let  $f(x)$  be a function defined on the interval  $[a, b]$  and let  $f(x)$  be continuous on  $[a, b]$ .

Then the function  $f(x)$  is continuous on the interval  $[a, b]$  and the function  $f(x)$  is continuous on  $[a, b]$ .

$$\lim_{x \rightarrow a} f(x) = f(a) \quad \left( \lim_{x \rightarrow a} f(x) = f(a) \right)$$

$$\left( \lim_{x \rightarrow a} f(x) = f(a) \right) \quad \left( \lim_{x \rightarrow a} f(x) = f(a) \right)$$

$$\lim_{x \rightarrow a} f(x) = f(a) \quad \left( \lim_{x \rightarrow a} f(x) = f(a) \right)$$

Let  $f(x)$  be a function defined on the interval  $[a, b]$  and let  $f(x)$  be continuous on  $[a, b]$ .

Then the function  $f(x)$  is continuous on the interval  $[a, b]$  and the function  $f(x)$  is continuous on  $[a, b]$ .

Let  $f(x)$  be a function defined on the interval  $[a, b]$  and let  $f(x)$  be continuous on  $[a, b]$ .

Then the function  $f(x)$  is continuous on the interval  $[a, b]$  and the function  $f(x)$  is continuous on  $[a, b]$ .

Let  $f(x)$  be a function defined on the interval  $[a, b]$  and let  $f(x)$  be continuous on  $[a, b]$ .

Then the function  $f(x)$  is continuous on the interval  $[a, b]$  and the function  $f(x)$  is continuous on  $[a, b]$ .

$$\lim_{x \rightarrow a} f(x) = f(a) \quad \left( \lim_{x \rightarrow a} f(x) = f(a) \right)$$

$$\lim_{x \rightarrow a} f(x) = f(a) \quad \left( \lim_{x \rightarrow a} f(x) = f(a) \right)$$

Let  $f(x)$  be a function defined on the interval  $[a, b]$  and let  $f(x)$  be continuous on  $[a, b]$ .

Then the function  $f(x)$  is continuous on the interval  $[a, b]$  and the function  $f(x)$  is continuous on  $[a, b]$ .



$$\frac{\partial}{\partial x_2} g(1,2) = - \frac{x_2' g^2}{2}$$

$$f(r_{12}) = .1 \ x_{12}^2 \ A^{-2}$$

$$\frac{(x_2')^2 g^2}{2} \lesssim \frac{1}{4}.$$

The first relationship stems from the fact that where  $g(1,2)$  has an appreciable value, near  $x_2' = 0$ ,  $g(1,2)$  is somewhat more gently varying than  $e^{-g^2/2}$ . The second is obtained by inspecting Fig. 2.

Therefore, we have

$$\begin{aligned} \left[ \Pi'_{(1)} \right]_{123} &\lesssim \frac{-\frac{h^2}{2m} \int dx_2 dx_1 \left( -\frac{1}{4} \cdot .1 A^{-2} \right) x_{12}^2 g(12)}{\int dx_2 dx_1 x_{12}^2 g(1,2)} \\ &\approx \frac{16 \pi \cdot .1}{4} \lesssim .4^\circ K \end{aligned}$$

There are 4 such pairs. Hence  $\Pi' \lesssim 1.6^\circ K$ .

In a similar fashion, we can estimate the second term of (F-1).

Because the atoms are localized near lattice sites in an ordered lattice, but the summation over  $k$  yields only the single term where  $\vec{u}_{ik} = -\vec{u}_{ij}$ . Putting  $i = 1, j = 2, k = 3$ , and using the same approximations as in (F-7), we get

$$\begin{aligned} \left[ \Pi'_{(2)} \right]_{12} &= -\frac{h^2}{2m} \frac{1}{A} \int \frac{\vec{u}_{12} \cdot \vec{u}_{13}}{r_{12} r_{13}} \frac{\partial}{\partial r_{12}} \frac{\partial}{\partial r_{13}} x_{12}^2 x_{13}^2 x_{32}^2 \\ &= -\frac{h^2}{2m} \frac{1}{A} \int - (3 \cdot 4)^2 (.1)^2 x_{12}^2 x_{13}^2 x_{32}^2 \prod_t x_{1t}^2 x_{2t}^2 x_{3t}^2 \\ &\quad \cdot d\vec{x}_1 d\vec{x}_2 d\vec{x}_3 \\ &= -\frac{h^2}{2m} \frac{1}{A} \int - (3 \cdot 4)^2 (.1)^2 x_{12}^2 x_{13}^2 x_{32}^2 \prod_t x_{1t}^2 x_{2t}^2 x_{3t}^2 \\ &\quad \cdot d\vec{x}_1 d\vec{x}_2 d\vec{x}_3 \end{aligned}$$



$$= + \frac{16}{2} (11) (.01) = .8$$

There are four such pairs per atom, so that  $H'_{(2)} \approx 3.2^\circ \text{K}$ .

The estimating procedure used here demonstrates only that  $H'$  is not the dominant term in the energy. The assumption that  $H'$  is small and has little effect on the wave function must remain an assumption of this theory.

$$R = (20.7 \times 10^3) \times 2$$

$\Delta T_{12} = 100^\circ\text{C}$  and is given by using the value of  $R$  as

at  $T_1$  and also substituted with the following conditions at

Value of  $T_2$  and substituting the value of  $R$  and  $T_1$  in the

the following equation the value of  $T_2$  is found to be

the value of  $T_2$  is found to be  $100^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_1$  is

the value of  $T_1$  is found to be  $20^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_2$  is

the value of  $T_2$  is found to be  $100^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_1$  is

the value of  $T_1$  is found to be  $20^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_2$  is

the value of  $T_2$  is found to be  $100^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_1$  is

the value of  $T_1$  is found to be  $20^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_2$  is

the value of  $T_2$  is found to be  $100^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_1$  is

the value of  $T_1$  is found to be  $20^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_2$  is

the value of  $T_2$  is found to be  $100^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_1$  is

the value of  $T_1$  is found to be  $20^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_2$  is

the value of  $T_2$  is found to be  $100^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_1$  is

the value of  $T_1$  is found to be  $20^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_2$  is

the value of  $T_2$  is found to be  $100^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_1$  is

the value of  $T_1$  is found to be  $20^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_2$  is

the value of  $T_2$  is found to be  $100^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_1$  is

the value of  $T_1$  is found to be  $20^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_2$  is

the value of  $T_2$  is found to be  $100^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_1$  is

the value of  $T_1$  is found to be  $20^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_2$  is

the value of  $T_2$  is found to be  $100^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_1$  is

the value of  $T_1$  is found to be  $20^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_2$  is

the value of  $T_2$  is found to be  $100^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_1$  is

the value of  $T_1$  is found to be  $20^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_2$  is

the value of  $T_2$  is found to be  $100^\circ\text{C}$  and the value of  $T_1$  is

## APPENDIX C

### THE CORRELATION ENERGY MATRIX ELEMENT

In this appendix we obtain the factor  $1/3$  introduced into the energy in Eq. IV-(27) by a more detailed study. In Eq. IV-(27) the matrix element  $(\Pi_t \sqrt{f_t}, (T_1 \sqrt{f_j}) \Pi_{k \neq j} \sqrt{f_k})$  measures a "kinetic energy" of particle 1, using  $\sqrt{f_j}$ , the part of the wave function of particle 1 which is determined by correlations with particle  $j$ . The sum of all such contributions is the sum total of the single particle energy resulting from the confining correlations. In mathematical symbols,  $T_1 \sqrt{f_j}$  is  $-\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_{1j}^2} \sqrt{f_j}$ .

Let us set up a coordinate frame with  $x_j$  parallel to  $R_{1j}$ , so that  $T_1 \sqrt{f_j} = -\hbar^2/2m \partial^2/\partial x_j^2 \sqrt{f_j}$ . Let us further assume that our symmetry is such that there are two more atoms, say  $k$  and  $t$ , at the same distance  $R_\lambda$ , but on the  $y_j$  and  $z_j$  axes. The kinetic energy associated with correlations of 1 with these three atoms is then

$$\begin{aligned} \langle T \rangle_{1,jkt} = & \left[ -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \left[ \sqrt{f_j} \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_j^2} \sqrt{f_j} \Pi_{n \neq j} f_n + \sqrt{f_k} \frac{\partial^2}{\partial y_j^2} \Pi_{n \neq k} f_n \right. \right. \\ & \left. \left. + \sqrt{f_t} \frac{\partial^2}{\partial z_j^2} \sqrt{f_t} \Pi_{n \neq t} f_n \right] \right] . \end{aligned} \quad (C-1)$$

We can write the same expression for two other sets of axes,  $x \rightarrow y$ , and  $x \rightarrow z$ , add the three results, and divide by 3.



THEOREM 1. (THEOREM OF THE BOUNDARY)

Let  $\Omega$  be a domain in  $\mathbb{R}^n$  with boundary  $\partial\Omega$ . Let  $f$  be a function on  $\partial\Omega$  and let  $u$  be a function on  $\Omega$  such that

$$\Delta u = 0 \text{ in } \Omega, \quad u = f \text{ on } \partial\Omega.$$

Then  $u$  is the unique function on  $\Omega$  satisfying the above conditions. (The uniqueness part of the theorem is proved in Theorem 2.)

The proof of the theorem is based on the following lemma.

LEMMA 1. Let  $u$  be a function on  $\Omega$  such that

$$\Delta u = 0 \text{ in } \Omega, \quad u = 0 \text{ on } \partial\Omega.$$

Then  $u = 0$  in  $\Omega$ . (The proof of the lemma is given in Theorem 3.)

$$u = 0 \text{ in } \Omega.$$

Let  $u$  be a function on  $\Omega$  such that  $\Delta u = 0$  in  $\Omega$  and  $u = f$  on  $\partial\Omega$ . Let  $v$  be a function on  $\Omega$  such that

$$\Delta v = 0 \text{ in } \Omega, \quad v = 0 \text{ on } \partial\Omega.$$

Then  $u + v$  is a function on  $\Omega$  such that  $\Delta(u + v) = 0$  in  $\Omega$  and  $u + v = f$  on  $\partial\Omega$ . By Lemma 1,  $u + v = 0$  in  $\Omega$ .

Since  $u = f$  on  $\partial\Omega$ , it follows that  $v = -f$  on  $\partial\Omega$ . By Lemma 1,  $v = 0$  in  $\Omega$ .

Thus  $u = f$  in  $\Omega$ . This completes the proof of Theorem 1.

$$u = f \text{ in } \Omega.$$

(The

$$u = f \text{ in } \Omega.$$

It is easy to see that the above theorem is true for any domain  $\Omega$  in  $\mathbb{R}^n$ .

Let  $\Omega$  be a domain in  $\mathbb{R}^n$  with boundary  $\partial\Omega$ . Let  $f$  be a function on  $\partial\Omega$  and let  $u$  be a function on  $\Omega$  such that

$$\begin{aligned}
\langle T \rangle_{1,jkt} = & \frac{1}{3} \left( -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \right) \left( \sqrt{f_j}, \left( \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_j^2} + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial y_k^2} + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial z_t^2} \right) \sqrt{f_j} \prod_{m \neq j} f_m \right. \\
& + \sqrt{f_k}, \left( \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_k^2} + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial y_t^2} + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial z_j^2} \right) \sqrt{f_k} \prod_{m \neq k} f_m \\
& \left. + \sqrt{f_t}, \left( \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_t^2} + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial y_j^2} + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial z_k^2} \right) \sqrt{f_t} \prod_{m \neq t} f_m \right). \quad (C-2)
\end{aligned}$$

But in our single-particle representation, all the  $f$ 's for atoms at the same distance  $R_\lambda$  are spherically symmetric about the origin, lattice site 1. The subscripts on the derivatives are then superfluous. We can, therefore, write, for (C-2),

$$\begin{aligned}
\langle T \rangle_{1,jkt} = & -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \frac{1}{3} \left( \sqrt{f_j} \nabla^2 \sqrt{f_j} \prod_{m \neq j} f_m + \sqrt{f_k} \nabla^2 \sqrt{f_k} \prod_{m \neq k} f_m \right. \\
& \left. + \sqrt{f_t} \nabla^2 \sqrt{f_t} \prod_{m \neq t} f_m \right) \\
= & \frac{1}{3} \prod_j \sqrt{f_j(\vec{r}_j)} \nabla^2 \prod_j \sqrt{f_j(\vec{r}_j)} \quad (C-3)
\end{aligned}$$

Writing (C-3) for all the atoms in all the rings, and normalizing we have

$$\langle T \rangle_1 = \frac{\int -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \frac{1}{3} \nabla^2 e^{-\frac{q_1^2 \delta^2}{2}} e^{-\frac{q_1^2 \delta^2}{2}} dv}{\int e^{-q_2 \delta^2} dv} \quad (C-4)$$

$$2 \sum_{j=1}^n \left( \frac{x_j}{x_j^2} + \frac{x_j}{x_j^2} + \frac{x_j}{x_j^2} \right) \sqrt{x_j} \left( \frac{1}{x_j} - \frac{1}{x_j^2} \right) \quad (5)$$

$$= 2 \sum_{j=1}^n \left( \frac{x_j}{x_j^2} + \frac{x_j}{x_j^2} + \frac{x_j}{x_j^2} \right) \sqrt{x_j} \left( \frac{1}{x_j} - \frac{1}{x_j^2} \right)$$

$$(60) \quad \left( 2 \sum_{j=1}^n \left( \frac{x_j}{x_j^2} + \frac{x_j}{x_j^2} + \frac{x_j}{x_j^2} \right) \sqrt{x_j} \left( \frac{1}{x_j} - \frac{1}{x_j^2} \right) \right)$$

where  $\pi$  is the constant  $\pi = 3.14159$

$$2 \sum_{j=1}^n \left( \frac{x_j}{x_j^2} + \frac{x_j}{x_j^2} + \frac{x_j}{x_j^2} \right) \sqrt{x_j} \left( \frac{1}{x_j} - \frac{1}{x_j^2} \right) \quad (5)$$

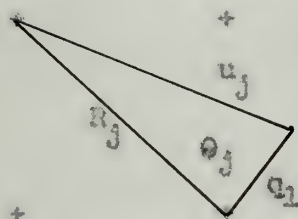
$$\left( 2 \sum_{j=1}^n \left( \frac{x_j}{x_j^2} + \frac{x_j}{x_j^2} + \frac{x_j}{x_j^2} \right) \sqrt{x_j} \left( \frac{1}{x_j} - \frac{1}{x_j^2} \right) \right)$$

$$(61) \quad \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{x_j}} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{x_j}} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{x_j}} \right) \sqrt{x_j} \left( \frac{1}{x_j} - \frac{1}{x_j^2} \right)$$

where  $\pi$  is the constant  $\pi = 3.14159$

$$(62) \quad \frac{1}{\sqrt{x_j}} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{x_j}} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{x_j}} \quad (6)$$

We can understand the factor  $1/3$  in another way, by applying classical mechanics and then identifying the dynamical variables with the corresponding quantum-mechanical operators.



In the diagram, we have  $q_1$ , measuring the displacement  $\bar{u}_j$  of the particle 1 from the lattice sites  $j$ , by the relationship

$$\vec{u}_j = \vec{q}_1 - \vec{R}_{1j}, \text{ or equivalently,}$$

$$u_j^2 = q_1^2 + R_j^2 + 2q_1 R_j \cos \theta_j. \quad (G-5)$$

We wish to measure the kinetic energy of the particle 1 by observing the lengths of all the  $u_j$  and taking a suitable average. Let us assume that we cannot measure our absolute position in space, but merely can measure the scalar quantities  $u_j^2$ . (The problem we wish to study is the inverse one, where we measure quantities in terms of  $q$ , and deduce the corresponding quantities in  $u_j$ .)

We proceed by taking the time derivative of (G-5) and squaring:

$$\begin{aligned} 2q\dot{q} - 2qR\cos\theta_j - 2qR\frac{\dot{\cos\theta}}{\cos\theta} &= 2u_j\dot{u}_j \\ q^2\dot{q}^2 + \dot{q}^2R^2\cos\theta_j + q^2R^2\left(\frac{\dot{\cos\theta}}{\cos\theta}\right)^2 - 2q\dot{q}R\cos\theta_j \\ - q^2\dot{q}R\frac{\dot{\cos\theta}}{\cos\theta} + 2\dot{q}qR^2\cos\theta_j\frac{\dot{\cos\theta}}{\cos\theta} &= \dot{u}_j^2 u_j^2. \end{aligned}$$

Summing over  $j$  and averaging  $u_j$ ,  $q$ , and  $\dot{q}$  over time, and observing that  $u_j$  is nearly constant and equal to  $R_j$ , we get

It is assumed that the system is in a steady state and that the input and output signals are periodic with the same period. The system is assumed to be linear and time-invariant.



Let the input signal be  $x(t)$  and the output signal be  $y(t)$ . The system is assumed to be linear and time-invariant. The input and output signals are periodic with the same period.

$$y(t) = \sum_{k=-\infty}^{\infty} c_k e^{j k \omega t}$$

The input signal  $x(t)$  is assumed to be periodic with period  $T$ . The output signal  $y(t)$  is assumed to be periodic with period  $T$ . The system is assumed to be linear and time-invariant.

The input signal  $x(t)$  is assumed to be periodic with period  $T$ . The output signal  $y(t)$  is assumed to be periodic with period  $T$ . The system is assumed to be linear and time-invariant. The input and output signals are periodic with the same period.

The input signal  $x(t)$  is assumed to be periodic with period  $T$ . The output signal  $y(t)$  is assumed to be periodic with period  $T$ . The system is assumed to be linear and time-invariant.

$$y(t) = \sum_{k=-\infty}^{\infty} c_k e^{j k \omega t} = \sum_{k=-\infty}^{\infty} c_k e^{j k \omega t} = \sum_{k=-\infty}^{\infty} c_k e^{j k \omega t}$$

The input signal  $x(t)$  is assumed to be periodic with period  $T$ . The output signal  $y(t)$  is assumed to be periodic with period  $T$ . The system is assumed to be linear and time-invariant.



$$n_j \dot{q}^2 + n_j \dot{q}^2 R_j^2 \frac{1}{3} + \dot{q}^2 R^2 n_j \left\langle \frac{\dot{\theta}_j^2}{\cos^2 \theta_j} \right\rangle = \sum_j R_j^2 \dot{u}_j^2.$$

Divide by  $R_j^2$ :

$$n_j \dot{q}^2 \frac{1}{3} + \dot{q}^2 n_j \left( \frac{\dot{q}^2}{R_j^2} + \left\langle \frac{\dot{\theta}_j^2}{\cos^2 \theta_j} \right\rangle \right) = \sum_j \dot{u}_j^2.$$

For small  $q$ , or low angular momentum, we get

$$n_j \dot{q}^2 \frac{1}{3} = \sum_j \dot{u}_j^2$$

or

$$\frac{n \dot{q}^2}{2} = 3 \frac{n}{2} \frac{\sum_j \dot{u}_j^2}{n_j}.$$

The kinetic energy is three times the average of the "kinetic energies" relative to the fixed points.

In our case, we ask for the apparent kinetic energy of relative motion to a set of points  $j$ , in terms of the kinetic energy of a particle moving in a path described by  $q$ ,

$$\frac{1}{3} = \frac{n \dot{q}^2}{2} = \frac{1}{n_j} \sum_j \frac{n \dot{u}_j^2}{2}. \quad (G-6)$$

By the correspondence principle, the right side of (G-6) represents the "effective kinetic energy" of Eq. IV-(26), and the left side represents the modified kinetic energy of IV-(27). We are, therefore, led to the factor  $1/3$ .



## APPENDIX II

### NORMALIZATION OF THE WAVE FUNCTION

In this appendix we attend to the detailed problem of normalizing the ground state wave function.

In Chapter IV, we found that the expression

$$\gamma(1) = A \sum_1 |\phi_1(1)|^2 \prod_k \int \gamma(k) \chi_{1k}^2(r_{1k}) d\vec{r}_k$$

could be written in the form  $\gamma(1) = \sum_j \gamma_j(1)$ , where

$$\gamma_1(1) = e^{-\alpha^2 q_1^2} e^{-\delta_0^2 q^2}.$$

Here  $\delta_0^2 = -\frac{1}{2} \ln \prod_k \int \gamma(k) \chi_{1k}^2(r_{1k}) d\vec{r}_k$ , a quantity which we can obtain

by a lattice sum, and

$$e^{-\alpha^2 q_1^2} = \lim_{\vec{r}_1 \rightarrow \vec{R}_1} A \sum_1 |\phi_1(1)|^2 \quad (\text{II-1})$$

We must estimate  $\alpha^2$  to determine its effect on  $\gamma_1(1)$ , and this necessity leads us into the determination of  $A$ , and the detailed form of the  $\phi_1$ .

The  $\phi_1(\vec{X}_j)$  are a set of functions which are eigenstates of our zero order Hamiltonian. These states are occupied only because we must satisfy the Pauli principle.

Since the variable  $\vec{X}_j$  does not appear in  $H_0$ , the labels  $i$  on  $\phi_i(\vec{X}_j)$  are good quantum numbers, and, in a way exactly parallel to

# THEOREM 1.1 (THE MAIN THEOREM)

Let  $\mathcal{H}$  be a Hilbert space and let  $\mathcal{A}$  be a subalgebra of  $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{H})$ . Let  $\mathcal{K}$  be a closed subspace of  $\mathcal{H}$  and let  $\mathcal{A}_\mathcal{K}$  be the restriction of  $\mathcal{A}$  to  $\mathcal{K}$ .

Let  $\mathcal{A}_\mathcal{K}$  be a maximal abelian subalgebra of  $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{K})$ .

$$\mathcal{A}_\mathcal{K} = \{A|_\mathcal{K} : A \in \mathcal{A}, A|_\mathcal{K} \text{ is normal}\}$$

Let  $\mathcal{A}_\mathcal{K}$  be a maximal abelian subalgebra of  $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{K})$ . Let  $\mathcal{A}_\mathcal{K}$  be a maximal abelian subalgebra of  $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{K})$ .

$$\mathcal{A}_\mathcal{K} = \{A|_\mathcal{K} : A \in \mathcal{A}, A|_\mathcal{K} \text{ is normal}\}$$

Let  $\mathcal{A}_\mathcal{K}$  be a maximal abelian subalgebra of  $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{K})$ . Let  $\mathcal{A}_\mathcal{K}$  be a maximal abelian subalgebra of  $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{K})$ .

Let  $\mathcal{A}_\mathcal{K}$  be a maximal abelian subalgebra of  $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{K})$ .

$$(1.1) \quad \mathcal{A}_\mathcal{K} = \{A|_\mathcal{K} : A \in \mathcal{A}, A|_\mathcal{K} \text{ is normal}\}$$

Let  $\mathcal{A}_\mathcal{K}$  be a maximal abelian subalgebra of  $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{K})$ . Let  $\mathcal{A}_\mathcal{K}$  be a maximal abelian subalgebra of  $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{K})$ .

Let  $\mathcal{A}_\mathcal{K}$  be a maximal abelian subalgebra of  $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{K})$ . Let  $\mathcal{A}_\mathcal{K}$  be a maximal abelian subalgebra of  $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{K})$ .

Let  $\mathcal{A}_\mathcal{K}$  be a maximal abelian subalgebra of  $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{K})$ . Let  $\mathcal{A}_\mathcal{K}$  be a maximal abelian subalgebra of  $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{K})$ .

Let  $\mathcal{A}_\mathcal{K}$  be a maximal abelian subalgebra of  $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{K})$ . Let  $\mathcal{A}_\mathcal{K}$  be a maximal abelian subalgebra of  $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{K})$ .

Let  $\mathcal{A}_\mathcal{K}$  be a maximal abelian subalgebra of  $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{K})$ . Let  $\mathcal{A}_\mathcal{K}$  be a maximal abelian subalgebra of  $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{K})$ .



the treatment of the shell model, we call upon them to describe the states permitted by the Pauli principle. Each of these states we will assume to be occupied by two, one, or no particles. (We label the states by  $l$  and get two particles per state in our modified scheme, rather than by  $j = l \pm 1/2$ , for one particle per state in the usual scheme.) Then, since the particles are kept in the vicinity of lattice sites, each wave must be of a wavelength sufficient to span two lattice sites.

In Chapter IV, we wrote a general set of waves for a simple cubic lattice

$$\phi_1 \rightarrow C_{ijk} \cos \left( \frac{\pi x}{n_1 a} + \beta_{n_1} \right) \cos \left( \frac{\pi y}{n_j a} + \beta_{n_j} \right) \cos \left( \frac{\pi z}{n_k a} + \beta_{n_k} \right) \quad (\text{II-2})$$

where the  $\beta_{n_i}$  were chosen for each wave to put no nodes at lattice points, and for  $n$  or  $1/n$  odd, to place maxima at lattice points, or for  $n$  or  $1/n$  even, maxima midway between lattice points.

We will now evaluate  $A$  in a particular case, where the lattice point  $\vec{R}_1$  is at the center of a solid  $(N_x a)$  by  $(N_y a)$  by  $(N_z a)$ . In this case,

$$\phi_1 \rightarrow C_{ijk} \prod_{\substack{u=x,y,z \\ n_u=n_1, n_j, n_k}} \cos \frac{\pi u}{n_u a} \quad (\text{II-3})$$

$$n_u = 1, 3, 5, \dots (N)^{1/3}.$$

We evaluate  $A$  by writing



the function  $f$  is continuous at  $a$  and  $f(a) = L$ , then  $f$  is continuous at  $a$ .  
 This is usually stated as: if  $f$  is continuous at  $a$  and  $f(a) = L$ , then  $f$  is continuous at  $a$ .  
 This is usually stated as: if  $f$  is continuous at  $a$  and  $f(a) = L$ , then  $f$  is continuous at  $a$ .  
 This is usually stated as: if  $f$  is continuous at  $a$  and  $f(a) = L$ , then  $f$  is continuous at  $a$ .  
 This is usually stated as: if  $f$  is continuous at  $a$  and  $f(a) = L$ , then  $f$  is continuous at  $a$ .  
 This is usually stated as: if  $f$  is continuous at  $a$  and  $f(a) = L$ , then  $f$  is continuous at  $a$ .  
 This is usually stated as: if  $f$  is continuous at  $a$  and  $f(a) = L$ , then  $f$  is continuous at  $a$ .  
 This is usually stated as: if  $f$  is continuous at  $a$  and  $f(a) = L$ , then  $f$  is continuous at  $a$ .

$$\left( \sqrt{x^2 + \frac{y^2}{2}} \right) \cos \left( \sqrt{x^2 + \frac{y^2}{2}} \right) = \left( \sqrt{x^2 + \frac{y^2}{2}} \right) \cos \left( \sqrt{x^2 + \frac{y^2}{2}} \right)$$

(10-2)

Let  $f$  be a function defined on the interval  $[a, b]$ . Then  $f$  is continuous at  $a$  if and only if  $f(a) = \lim_{x \rightarrow a^+} f(x)$ .  
 Let  $f$  be a function defined on the interval  $[a, b]$ . Then  $f$  is continuous at  $a$  if and only if  $f(a) = \lim_{x \rightarrow a^+} f(x)$ .  
 Let  $f$  be a function defined on the interval  $[a, b]$ . Then  $f$  is continuous at  $a$  if and only if  $f(a) = \lim_{x \rightarrow a^+} f(x)$ .

Let  $f$  be a function defined on the interval  $[a, b]$ . Then  $f$  is continuous at  $a$  if and only if  $f(a) = \lim_{x \rightarrow a^+} f(x)$ .  
 Let  $f$  be a function defined on the interval  $[a, b]$ . Then  $f$  is continuous at  $a$  if and only if  $f(a) = \lim_{x \rightarrow a^+} f(x)$ .  
 Let  $f$  be a function defined on the interval  $[a, b]$ . Then  $f$  is continuous at  $a$  if and only if  $f(a) = \lim_{x \rightarrow a^+} f(x)$ .

(10-3)

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{x^2 + y^2}} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{x^2 + y^2}} \cdot \frac{1}{\sqrt{x^2 + y^2}} = \frac{1}{x^2 + y^2}$$

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{x^2 + y^2}} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{x^2 + y^2}} \cdot \frac{1}{\sqrt{x^2 + y^2}} = \frac{1}{x^2 + y^2}$$

Let  $f$  be a function defined on the interval  $[a, b]$ . Then  $f$  is continuous at  $a$  if and only if  $f(a) = \lim_{x \rightarrow a^+} f(x)$ .

Let  $f$  be a function defined on the interval  $[a, b]$ . Then  $f$  is continuous at  $a$  if and only if  $f(a) = \lim_{x \rightarrow a^+} f(x)$ .

Let  $f$  be a function defined on the interval  $[a, b]$ . Then  $f$  is continuous at  $a$  if and only if  $f(a) = \lim_{x \rightarrow a^+} f(x)$ .

$$\begin{aligned}
 \int r_1(1) d\vec{x}_1 &= A \int \sum_1 |\phi_1(1)|^2 \prod_k \int r_k(k) x_{1k}^2 d\vec{x}_k \\
 &= A \int \sum_{1jk} C_{1jk}^2 \prod_u \cos^2 \left( \frac{\pi u}{n_u a} \right) e^{-\beta_0^2 q_1^2} \sqrt{\frac{\beta_0^2}{\pi}}^3 d\vec{x}_1.
 \end{aligned}
 \tag{H-4}$$

We have learned that  $e^{-\beta_0^2 q_1^2}$  is fast-varying compared to the lattice spacing. Hence, all the  $\cos^2$  terms can be taken to be unity, and we get

$$\int r_1(1) d\vec{x}_1 = 1 = A \sum_{1jk} C_{1jk}^2,$$

or

$$A = \frac{1}{\sum_{1jk} C_{1jk}^2} \tag{H-5}$$

We now use IV-(34) to estimate  $\alpha$

$$\lim_{\vec{r}_1 \rightarrow \vec{R}_1} A \sum_1 |\phi_1(r_1)|^2 = e^{-\alpha^2 q_1^2}$$

We will estimate  $\alpha$  for the case leading to the waves (H-3).

Using the lowest terms in the expansion of  $\cos^2(x)$ , we get

$$e^{-\alpha^2 q^2} = \frac{1}{\sum_{1jk} C_{1jk}^2} \sum_{1jk} \left[ C_{1jk}^2 \prod_{\substack{u=x,y,z \\ n_u=n_1, n_j, n_k}} \left( 1 - \frac{u^2 \pi^2}{2 n_u^2 a^2} \right) \right] \tag{H-6}$$

We cannot evaluate the sums in (H-6) unless we know more about the relative values of the  $C_{ijk}$ . We now show that, if we use the assumptions preceding (H-2), (H-6) takes on a particularly simple form because the  $C_{ijk}$  are all of the same magnitude.

1. Let  $\mathcal{A}$  be a  $\mathbb{C}$ -algebra and  $\mathcal{B}$  be a  $\mathbb{C}$ -algebra.

$$(a) \quad \text{Let } \mathcal{A} = \mathbb{C}[x] \text{ and } \mathcal{B} = \mathbb{C}[y]. \text{ Define } \phi: \mathcal{A} \rightarrow \mathcal{B} \text{ by } \phi(x) = y^2.$$

Is  $\phi$  a homomorphism? Justify your answer. (4 marks)

$$(b) \quad \text{Let } \mathcal{A} = \mathbb{C}[x] \text{ and } \mathcal{B} = \mathbb{C}[y]. \text{ Define } \phi: \mathcal{A} \rightarrow \mathcal{B} \text{ by } \phi(x) = y.$$

Is  $\phi$  a homomorphism? Justify your answer. (4 marks)

$$(c) \quad \text{Let } \mathcal{A} = \mathbb{C}[x] \text{ and } \mathcal{B} = \mathbb{C}[y]. \text{ Define } \phi: \mathcal{A} \rightarrow \mathcal{B} \text{ by } \phi(x) = y^2 + y.$$

Is  $\phi$  a homomorphism? Justify your answer. (4 marks)

$$(d) \quad \text{Let } \mathcal{A} = \mathbb{C}[x] \text{ and } \mathcal{B} = \mathbb{C}[y]. \text{ Define } \phi: \mathcal{A} \rightarrow \mathcal{B} \text{ by } \phi(x) = y^2 + y + 1.$$

Is  $\phi$  a homomorphism? Justify your answer. (4 marks)

Is  $\phi$  a homomorphism? Justify your answer. (4 marks)

We write the  $N$  body density matrix in a slightly different form:

$$\begin{aligned} \Gamma^{(N)} = & \sum_P P_0 |\phi_1(1)|^2 [x_{12}(r_{12}) x_{13} x_{14} \dots] |\phi_2(2)|^2 \\ & [x_{21}(r_{21}) x_{23} x_{24} \dots] |\phi_3(3)|^2 [x_{31}(r_{31}) x_{32} x_{34} \dots] \\ & \dots |\phi_N(N)|^2 [x_{N1} x_{N2} \dots x_{N,N-1}]. \end{aligned} \quad (H-7)$$

In (H-7), we again neglect overlap. We, therefore, have

$$\begin{aligned} \int \Gamma^{(N)} d\vec{x}_1 d\vec{x}_2 \dots d\vec{x}_N &= 1 \\ &= N! \int |\phi_a(1)|^2 [x_{12} \dots x_{1N}] |\phi_b(2)|^2 [x_{23} \dots x_{2N}] \\ & \quad |\phi_c(3)|^2 [x_{31} \dots x_{3N}] \dots |\phi_N(N)|^2 \\ & \quad [x_{N1} \dots x_{N,N-1}] d\vec{x}_1 d\vec{x}_2 d\vec{x}_3 \dots d\vec{x}_N \end{aligned} \quad (H-8)$$

Because each state is occupied to the same extent as any other state, in the way we write (H-7) and (H-8), all the permutations give the same value. In (H-8) we have written a particular one, and multiplied by the number of permutations.

We learned in Chapter IV that the correlations functions  $x_{ij}$  can be treated to a good approximation as having one of the members of the pair fastened down to a lattice site. Then the product  $[x_{12} x_{13} x_{14} \dots x_{1N}]$  is the square root of the lattice product  $\prod_k x^2(u_{1k})$ , which we evaluated in Chapter IV as  $F_1$ .





We can write  $F_1$  in a form which is general, for the entire solid, provided that  $\delta^2 \gg \frac{1}{N}$ :

$$F_1 = \sum_j \prod_{\lambda} [\chi^2(R_{\lambda})]^{n_{\lambda}} e^{-\delta_0^2 [\vec{R}_j - \vec{r}_1]^2}$$

Since only one member of the sum has any appreciable value, because of our assumption of no overlap, we can write

$$\sqrt{F_1} = \sum_j \prod_{\lambda} [\chi^2(R_{\lambda})]^{n_{\lambda}/2} e^{-\frac{\delta_0^2}{2} [\vec{R}_j - \vec{r}_1]^2}$$

We, therefore, can write (H-8) in the following form

$$1 = N! \prod_k \int |\phi_k(1)|^2 \prod_{\lambda} [\chi(R_{\lambda})]^{n_{\lambda}} e^{-\frac{\delta_0^2}{2} [\vec{R}_1 - \vec{r}_1]^2} \quad (\text{H-9})$$

Here, we have taken advantage of the fact that only the single member of the sum over  $j$ , where  $\vec{R}_j = \vec{R}_1$ , gives any contribution. Each of the states  $k$  is equally populated with two particles, hence  $k = 1, 2, \dots, \frac{N}{2}$  and all the  $N$  integrals are equal. Because of the fast varying Gaussian function, each of the cosines in  $\phi_k(1)$  is practically unity in this integral. Therefore, we have

$$1 = N! \prod_{1,j,k} \int C_{1jk}^2 \prod_{\lambda} [\chi(R_{\lambda})]^{n_{\lambda}} e^{-\frac{\delta_0^2}{2} (\vec{R}_1 - \vec{r}_1)^2} dv_1.$$

Define  $\prod_{\lambda} [\chi(R_{\lambda})]^{n_{\lambda}} = \beta(a)$

$$\frac{N}{\sqrt{1}} = \frac{N}{\sqrt{N!}} C_{1jk}^2 \beta(a) \sqrt{\frac{\pi}{2}} \frac{3}{\delta_0}$$

Let  $\mathcal{H}$  be a Hilbert space and let  $\mathcal{A}$  be a subalgebra of  $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{H})$ . Then the following conditions are equivalent:

$$\mathcal{H} = \overline{\mathcal{A}\mathcal{H}} \iff \mathcal{A} \text{ is dense in } \mathcal{B}(\mathcal{H})$$

Proof: Suppose  $\mathcal{H} = \overline{\mathcal{A}\mathcal{H}}$ . Then for any  $T \in \mathcal{B}(\mathcal{H})$ , we can find a sequence  $\{T_n\} \subset \mathcal{A}$  such that  $T_n \rightarrow T$  in the strong operator topology.

$$\|T - T_n\| \rightarrow 0 \iff T_n \rightarrow T \text{ in norm}$$

Conversely, suppose  $\mathcal{A}$  is dense in  $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{H})$ . Then for any  $T \in \mathcal{B}(\mathcal{H})$ , we can find a sequence  $\{T_n\} \subset \mathcal{A}$  such that  $T_n \rightarrow T$  in norm.

$$(10) \quad \mathcal{H} = \overline{\mathcal{A}\mathcal{H}} \iff \mathcal{A} \text{ is dense in } \mathcal{B}(\mathcal{H})$$

To prove (10), suppose  $\mathcal{H} = \overline{\mathcal{A}\mathcal{H}}$ . Then for any  $T \in \mathcal{B}(\mathcal{H})$ , we can find a sequence  $\{T_n\} \subset \mathcal{A}$  such that  $T_n \rightarrow T$  in the strong operator topology. This implies that  $\mathcal{A}$  is dense in  $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{H})$ .

Conversely, suppose  $\mathcal{A}$  is dense in  $\mathcal{B}(\mathcal{H})$ . Then for any  $T \in \mathcal{B}(\mathcal{H})$ , we can find a sequence  $\{T_n\} \subset \mathcal{A}$  such that  $T_n \rightarrow T$  in norm. This implies that  $\mathcal{H} = \overline{\mathcal{A}\mathcal{H}}$ .

$$\mathcal{H} = \overline{\mathcal{A}\mathcal{H}} \iff \mathcal{A} \text{ is dense in } \mathcal{B}(\mathcal{H})$$

Q.E.D.

$$\mathcal{H} = \overline{\mathcal{A}\mathcal{H}} \iff \mathcal{A} \text{ is dense in } \mathcal{B}(\mathcal{H})$$

or

$$C_{ijk}^2 = \frac{\delta_0^3}{(2\pi)^{3/2} (N!)^{1/N}} = \frac{\delta_0^3 e}{(2\pi)^{3/2} N \beta(a)}.$$

Hence all the  $C_{ijk}$  are equal, and given by  $(\delta_0^3 e / [(2\pi)^{3/2} N \beta(a)]^{1/2} = C_0$ . The numerical value of  $C_0$  will not be useful to us. However, the fact that the  $C_{ijk}$  are all equal, within our assumptions, is of value.

We rewrite (H-6), using  $C_0$  for all the  $C_{ijk}$ 's

$$e^{-\alpha^2 q^2} = \frac{1}{C_0^2 N} C_0^2 \sum_{ijk} \left[ 1 - \frac{\pi^2}{2a^2} \left( \frac{x^2}{n_i^2} + \frac{y^2}{n_j^2} + \frac{z^2}{n_k^2} \right) \right] \quad (\text{H-10})$$

We have taken the leading terms in the product. (The expansion we use in (H-10) is expected to be valid, since  $e^{-\alpha^2 q^2}$  will provide a cut off in the region of poor convergence.)

In the sum of (H-10), there are  $2(N)^{2/3}$  terms with  $n_i = 1$ ,  $2(N)^{2/3}$  terms with  $n_i = 3$ , etc. This comes about because the quantities  $1/n_i, 1/n_j, 1/n_k$  are proportional to the components of a vector in the reciprocal lattice of our assumed simple cubic lattice. There are  $N_y \times N_z = (N)^{2/3}$  lattice points in the plane  $n_i = (\text{const})$  and an equal number in the reflected plane.

We can therefore rewrite (H-10)

$$e^{-\alpha^2 q^2} = \frac{1}{N} \left( N - \frac{2\pi^2}{2a^2} \left[ \pi^2 \left( \frac{1}{1} + \frac{1}{9} + \frac{1}{25} + \dots + \frac{1}{N} \right) N^{2/3} \right. \right. \\ \left. \left. + y^2 N^{2/3} \left( \frac{1}{1} + \frac{1}{9} + \frac{1}{25} + \dots + \frac{1}{N} \right) + z^2 N^{2/3} \left( \frac{1}{1} + \dots + \frac{1}{N} \right) \right] \right).$$





$$\begin{aligned} \text{But } \frac{1}{1} + \frac{1}{3^2} + \frac{1}{5^2} + \dots &= \left( \frac{1}{1} + \frac{1}{2^2} + \frac{1}{3^2} + \dots \right) - \frac{1}{4} \left( \frac{1}{1} + \frac{1}{2^2} + \frac{1}{3^2} + \dots \right) \\ &= \frac{3}{4} \frac{\pi^2}{6} = \frac{\pi^2}{8} \end{aligned}$$

for large  $N$ . Hence

$$e^{-\alpha^2 q^2} = \frac{1}{N} \left[ N - \frac{N^2}{a^2} \frac{\pi^2}{6} \left( x^2 + y^2 + z^2 \right) \right] = e^{-\frac{\pi^4 q^2}{8 \cdot N^{1/3} a^2}}$$

or

$$\alpha \approx \frac{\pi^2 \sqrt{2}}{4 N^{1/6} a} \quad (\text{H-11})$$

In Eq. IV-(55), we stated that the contribution to the energy from the waves  $\sum_1 |\phi_1(1)|^2$  is:

$$\langle T \rangle_\alpha = - \frac{\pi^2}{2\pi} \frac{\int \sum_1 \phi_1(1) \nabla_1^2 \phi_1(1) e^{-\alpha^2 q_1^2} d\vec{r}_1}{\int \sum_1 |\phi_1(1)|^2 e^{-\alpha^2 q_1^2} d\vec{r}_1} \quad (\text{H-12})$$

and is of order  $N^{-1/3}$ . We now show this explicitly. Using the representation (H-2), we have

$$\begin{aligned} \langle T \rangle_\alpha &= - \frac{\pi^2}{2\pi A_1} \int \frac{C_0^2 \pi^2}{a^2} \left[ \sum_{1jk} \left( \frac{1}{n_1^2} + \frac{1}{n_j^2} + \frac{1}{n_k^2} \right) \right] \\ &\quad \cos^2 \left( \frac{\pi x_1}{n_1 a} \right) \cos^2 \left( \frac{\pi y_1}{n_j a} \right) \cos^2 \left( \frac{\pi z_1}{n_k a} \right) e^{-\alpha^2 q_1^2} d\vec{r}_1. \end{aligned}$$

where we have set the integral in the denominator of (H-12) equal to  $A_1$ .





As we did in (H-4), we can take all the cosines to be unity.

We then get:

$$T_{\alpha} = -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \frac{\pi^2}{a^2} \frac{\sum_{1jk} \left( \frac{1}{n_1^2} + \frac{1}{n_j^2} + \frac{1}{n_k^2} \right)}{\sum_{1jk} (1)}.$$

Again, the sum  $\sum_{1jk}$  has  $N$  terms. Using  $1/1 + 1/3^2 + 1/5^2 + \dots = \pi^2/6$ , we have

$$\begin{aligned} T_{\alpha} &= -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m} \frac{\pi^2}{8} \frac{N^{1/3} N^{1/3} N^{1/3} 3\pi^2}{N^{1/3} N^{1/3} N^{1/3} a^2} \\ &= -\frac{\hbar^2 \pi^2 3}{16 m N^{1/3} a^2} \pi^2. \end{aligned}$$

Let  $f(x) = x^2 + 2x + 1$  and  $g(x) = x^2 + 1$ . Then

we have

$$\frac{\left(\frac{1}{f(x)} + \frac{1}{g(x)} + \frac{1}{h(x)}\right)^2}{(f(x) + g(x) + h(x))^2} = \frac{1}{f(x)} + \frac{1}{g(x)} + \frac{1}{h(x)} = 0.$$

Let  $f(x) = x^2 + 2x + 1$  and  $g(x) = x^2 + 1$ . Then we have

$$\frac{f(x) + g(x) + h(x)}{f(x) + g(x) + h(x)} = 1.$$

Let  $f(x) = x^2 + 2x + 1$  and  $g(x) = x^2 + 1$ . Then we have

$$\frac{f(x) + g(x) + h(x)}{f(x) + g(x) + h(x)} = 1.$$

Let  $f(x) = x^2 + 2x + 1$  and  $g(x) = x^2 + 1$ . Then we have

$$\frac{f(x) + g(x) + h(x)}{f(x) + g(x) + h(x)} = 1.$$

$$\frac{f(x) + g(x) + h(x)}{f(x) + g(x) + h(x)} = 1.$$

Let  $f(x) = x^2 + 2x + 1$  and  $g(x) = x^2 + 1$ . Then we have

## GLOSSARY

S.P.O.	Single Particle Orbital
B.P.	H. Bernhardes and H. Primakoff, Phys. Rev. <u>119</u> , 968 (1960)
$\vec{r}_1$	The position coordinates of particle 1, not including spin $\xi_1$ ( $\vec{X}_1$ includes spin)
$\vec{X}_1$	The coordinates of particle 1, including spin $\xi_1$ ( $\vec{r}_1$ does not include spin)
$^{\circ} K$	Degrees Kelvin
A	Angstrom unit
$\sum_P$	Forms a Slater determinant of what follows. The permutation operator for Fermi particles
$\sum_P \rho$	Forms a symmetric permutation of what follows.
$\sum_P \rho_1$	Permutes only the coordinate indices 1, in the anti-symmetric sense.
$\delta(x)$	Dirac $\delta$ function
$\delta$	The "wave number" of the single particle representation $r(1) = \text{const } e^{-\delta^2 q_1^2}, \quad q_1 = \text{distance from lattice site 1.}$
$r_j(u_{jk})$	$\int r(j) \chi_{kj}^2(r_{kj}) d\vec{r}_j$
$\Gamma^{(p)}(\vec{X}_1, \vec{X}_2, \dots, \vec{X}_p   \vec{X}_1, \vec{X}_2, \dots, \vec{X}_p)$	Density matrix of order (p) (See Chapter IV.)
$r(\vec{X}'   \vec{X}_1)$	Density matrix of order 1. (See Chapter IV.)
$\vec{g}_{1j}$	The displacement between particle 1 and particle j. This variable has a derivative $\partial/\partial x$ , but no derivative $\partial/\partial r_{1j}$ .

# INDEX

1. The first part of the book is devoted to a general introduction to the subject of the book.	1
2. The second part of the book is devoted to a general introduction to the subject of the book.	2
3. The third part of the book is devoted to a general introduction to the subject of the book.	3
4. The fourth part of the book is devoted to a general introduction to the subject of the book.	4
5. The fifth part of the book is devoted to a general introduction to the subject of the book.	5
6. The sixth part of the book is devoted to a general introduction to the subject of the book.	6
7. The seventh part of the book is devoted to a general introduction to the subject of the book.	7
8. The eighth part of the book is devoted to a general introduction to the subject of the book.	8
9. The ninth part of the book is devoted to a general introduction to the subject of the book.	9
10. The tenth part of the book is devoted to a general introduction to the subject of the book.	10
11. The eleventh part of the book is devoted to a general introduction to the subject of the book.	11
12. The twelfth part of the book is devoted to a general introduction to the subject of the book.	12
13. The thirteenth part of the book is devoted to a general introduction to the subject of the book.	13
14. The fourteenth part of the book is devoted to a general introduction to the subject of the book.	14
15. The fifteenth part of the book is devoted to a general introduction to the subject of the book.	15
16. The sixteenth part of the book is devoted to a general introduction to the subject of the book.	16
17. The seventeenth part of the book is devoted to a general introduction to the subject of the book.	17
18. The eighteenth part of the book is devoted to a general introduction to the subject of the book.	18
19. The nineteenth part of the book is devoted to a general introduction to the subject of the book.	19
20. The twentieth part of the book is devoted to a general introduction to the subject of the book.	20



$r_{1j}$ 

The interparticle parameter, which is an independent variable in the Plavinsage formulation of the Schrodinger equation. It has the constraint

$$r_{1j} = \sqrt{(x_1 - x_j)^2 + (y_1 - y_j)^2 + (z_1 - z_j)^2} = \sqrt{\vec{u}_{1j} \cdot \vec{u}_{1j}},$$

which must be imposed when evaluating matrix elements containing  $r_{1j}$ . There is a derivative of  $r_{1j}$ ,  $\partial/\partial x_{1j}$  but no derivative  $\partial/\partial x$ .

 $\vec{r}_{1j}$ 

The position of the center-of-mass of particles 1 and j. There is a derivative  $\partial/\partial x$ , but no derivative  $\partial/\partial x_{1j}$ .

 $\chi_{1j}(r_{1j})$ 

The correlation function, defined by formula III-(17). It has a series representation  $F_0(\sigma/r_{1j}) \Theta(r_{1j} - r_0)$ , where  $\Theta$  is the step function, and a Yukawa-type representation,  $1 - r_0/r \ e^{-r(r - r_0)}$ .

 $u_{kj}$ 

The distance from the field point k to the lattice point j.

 $\phi_i(\vec{r}_j)$ 

The single-particle wave function, a function of space and spin.

 $\phi_i(\vec{r}_j)$ 

The single-particle wave function, a function of space only.

 $\phi(x)$ 

The error integral  $\phi(x) = (2/\pi^{1/2}) \int_0^x e^{-t^2} dt$ .

 $F_t$ 

$\Pi f_j(u_{tj})$ , where t is the position of an atom near lattice point t.

 $F_0(x)$ 

A series expression for  $\chi$ , the correlation function.

 $F(r_{1j})$ 

An arbitrary function of  $(r_{1j})$ .

 $\Delta_j$ 

$|\vec{u}_{1j}| = |\vec{R}_{1j}|$  (See Fig. 4.)



$$E_{\lambda} \left[ \frac{1}{u} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{d}{du} \right] \frac{f'(u)}{f(u)} \Big|_{R_{\lambda}}$$

$R_{\lambda}$  The distance from the lattice point denoting the single-particle reference point to the shell of atoms at distance  $R_{\lambda}$ , a function of lattice geometry. (See Fig. 4.)

$$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 1 \\ 1 \\ 1 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 3 \\ 3 \\ 3 \end{pmatrix}$$

2

... ..  
 ... ..  
 ... ..  
 ... ..

2

... ..  
 ... ..  
 ... ..  
 ... ..  
 ... ..

2

... ..  
 ... ..

2

... ..  
 ... ..

2

... ..  
 ... ..

2

... ..  
 ... ..

2

... ..  
 ... ..

2

TYPIST

Mrs. Nadine Cline  
395 Anna Avenue  
Mountain View, California  
Yorkshire 8-2357





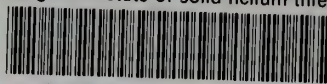






thesS19

The ground state of solid helium three.



3 2768 002 00275 0

DUDLEY KNOX LIBRARY